This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

ANDOVER-HARVARD LIBRARY
AH 4RAD

Colonial Church Histories

The Church in the West Indies.

Harvard Depository
Brittle Book

Digitized by Google

h Hist., Mod
8429
942.97 Br[illegible]sh
Caldwell

Library of the Divinity School.

Bought with money

GIVEN BY

THE SOCIETY

FOR PROMOTING

THEOLOGICAL EDUCATION.

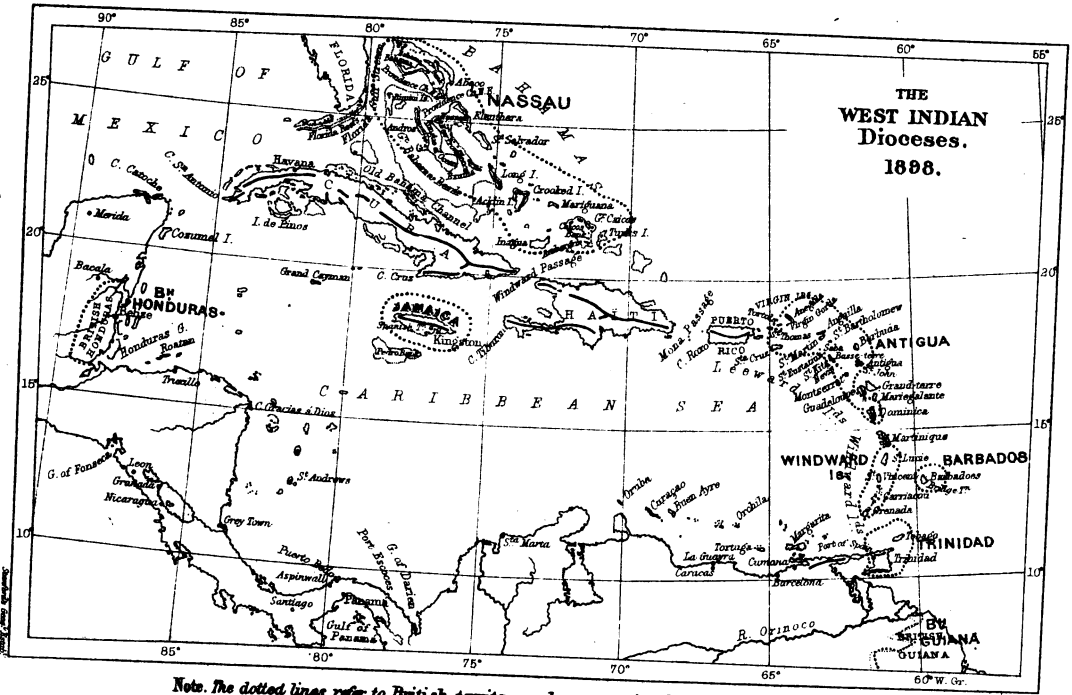
Received 10 August, 1899.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Note. The dotted lines refer to British territory only, except in the case of Antigua where some small Foreign islands could not be excluded.

London, Published by the Soc. for promoting Christian Knowledge

Digitized by Google

Colonial Church Histories

THE CHURCH

IN THE

WEST INDIES

BY

A. CALDECOTT, B.D.

PROFESSOR OF LOGIC AND PHILOSOPHY IN KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON;
RECTOR OF LOPHAM, NORFOLK; LATE FELLOW AND DEAN
OF ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; SOMETIME
PRINCIPAL OF CODRINGTON COLLEGE,
BARBADOS.

With Map.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE TRACT COMMITTEE.

LONDON:

SOCIETY FOR PROMOTING CHRISTIAN KNOWLEDGE,
NORTHUMBERLAND AVENUE, W.C.; 43, QUEEN VICTORIA STREET, E.C.
BRIGHTON: 129, NORTH STREET.
NEW YORK: E. & J. B. YOUNG & CO.

1898.

Digitized by Google

AUG 10
Divinity school.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON & BUNGAY.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

THE fact that the British West Indies include eight groups of Colonies, which are politically quite separate, and have come into the empire at different times and in various ways, made it worth considering whether the plan of this book should not be to give a separate account of each Colony or group. But behind their differences there are certain common features which give them a partial unity, and after deliberation it seemed better to make this a history of the Church in the islands as a whole, with glimpses from time to time at the individual Colonies.

The primacy of Jamaica has necessarily given to that Colony the most frequent mention, but it is as typical to some extent of them all that it has been taken.

I have endeavoured to show the connection of the stream of Church history here with the general history of the Church of England on the one hand, and with the social life of the Colonies on the other.

Of materials for history there was abundance: able men have written histories of many of these Colonies; and for recent years journals and reports of Synods and other Church literature have been available. My thanks are due to the secretaries of many Societies, both Church and Nonconformist; and the libraries of the Church House and the Royal Colonial Institute have been invaluable.

February, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

THE BRITISH WEST INDIES—INDUSTRIAL CONDITION—SLAVERY, A.D. 1605—1800

Our territory in W. Indies—Interest not to be measured by area or population—Changes in their relative importance in Empire—Not a Unity—Government and Law—Industrial System: Sugar-planting—The Slave Trade: Chiefly retained by Home Influence—Slavery—Considerations affecting W. Indian mind—Alleged Cruelties considered ... ... *p.* 9

CHAPTER II

SOCIAL LIFE IN THE SLAVERY PERIOD

Five Classes of Society: Ruling Whites, Subordinate Whites, White Bondservants, Coloured People and Free Blacks, Slaves—Family Life—Higher Life—Dependence ... *p.* 26

CHAPTER III

THE CHURCH IN THE SLAVERY PERIOD

The Church Established from outset—Toleration allowed—Provision for the Clergy and Churches—Irreligious character of many of original settlers—Government of the Church—The Bishop of London's Jurisdiction—The Governor as Ordinary—No corporate body of Clergy—Refusal to appoint Bishops considered—Character of the Clergy—Education—The Church and the Slaves—Alleged incongruity between Slavery and Baptism—West Indian arguments for refusing Baptism—Nonconformist Missions: Moravian, Methodist, Baptist *p.* 43

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV

EMANCIPATION COMING INTO VIEW—REVIVAL OF THE CHURCH, A.D. 1800—1833

Political change in Britain—Increase of Evangelical influence—Resistance in W. Indies—Annals of Progress, 1797—1833; Mitigation of Hardships of Slavery—Discipline and Encouragement of Clergy—Legal protection of Nonconformist Missionaries—Registration of Slaves—Amelioration policy of Canning—Two Bishoprics formed, supported by Imperial Grants—Arrival of Bishops Coleridge and Lipscombe—Codrington College re-constituted—Riots in Jamaica—Deputation to England—Emancipation—Religious character of reception by the slaves—Note on some recent additions to our territory, Trinidad, Guiana, etc. ... ... *p.* 77

CHAPTER V

THE PERIOD IMMEDIATELY SUCCEEDING EMANCIPATION, A.D. 1833—1870

Imperial assistance to Religion and Education—Liberality of Local Legislatures—S. P. G. Negro Education Fund—C. M. S., Nonconformist Societies—Increase of Clergy—Catechists and Schoolmasters—Increased resort to Offices of the Church—Lay Help—Education—Benevolent Institutions—Encouragement of Industrious Habits—Missionary Enterprise engaged in—The Church in Colonies acquired since 1763: Relation to Church of Rome in some of these—Endowment question—Education—Denominational system secured—Compromise as to Establishment in Guiana—The Bahamas—British Honduras—Statistics of religious bodies in 1870 ... *p.* 100

CHAPTER VI

DISESTABLISHMENT AND DISENDOWMENT

The movement in general—Application to W. Indies—Ordered from Great Britain—Cessation of Imperial support of Bishoprics—Disestablishment Act in Jamaica, 1870—In other Islands—Concurrent Endowment in Trinidad and Guiana—Re-establishment in Barbados—Effects of Disestablishment—Of Disendowment ... ... *p.* 134

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

REORGANIZATION AND PROGRESS, A.D. 1870—1897

Conditions favouring reorganization—Diocesan Constitutions, their leading features—Example, the Constitution of the Church in Jamaica—The Synod of the Province—Increase of Bishops, Clergy, and other Workers—Catechists and Lay Readers—Deaconesses—Education of the Clergy—Education: University, High Schools, Elementary, Sunday Schools—Training of Teachers—Social and Moral Life: Relation of the Races, Marriage, Illegitimate Births, Sobriety, Veracity, Steadiness, Industry, Thrift, Honesty, Crimes, Personal Qualities—Practical Character of Religious Work *p.* 148

CHAPTER VIII

SPECIAL TOPICS: THE COOLIES—THE ABORIGINAL INHABITANTS—WORK ON NON-BRITISH ISLANDS, AND ON THE ADJACENT CONTINENT—FOREIGN MISSIONARY WORK—THE PONGAS MISSION—CODRINGTON COLLEGE, BARBADOS—THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLISH SOCIETIES

The Coolie System—Responsibility of the Church—Efforts made—The Aboriginal inhabitants: In the Islands, in Guiana—Brett's Missionary Labours—Recent work—Work in Non-British Islands—Foreign Missionary Work: The Pongas Mission in W. Africa—Codrington College: Its Foundation and Early History; Re-constitution by Bishop Coleridge; Principal Rawle; Recent History—The Connection of W. Indian Church with English Church Societies: S.P.G., S.P.C.K., C.M.S., and Colonial and Continental—The New England Company—The Christian Faith Society, its origin and history—The Ladies' Negro Education Society *p.* 204

CHAPTER IX

SOME SPECIAL POINTS AND FINAL OBSERVATIONS

Antigua—Windward Islands—Trinidad and Tobago—Guiana—Nassau—British Honduras—Other Christian Bodies and their present position: Presbyterians, Congregationalists, Baptists, Methodists, Moravians, Salvation Army—Statistics

Digitized by Google

—Misrepresentations: Froude, Mr. Salmon—Final Reflections: The Industrial Depression; Grounds for Encouragement of W. Indian Churchmen—The time not yet come for entire self-maintenance ... ... *p.* 241

APPENDIX I. The West Indian Episcopate ... *p.* 262
,, II. Statistical Table ... ... ,, 263
,, III. Climate and length of service ... ,, 264
,, IV. Landmarks for West Indian Church History ... ... ,, 265
,, V. List of Authorities quoted ... ... ,, 267

Digitized by Google

THE CHURCH IN THE WEST INDIES

CHAPTER I

THE BRITISH WEST INDIES—INDUSTRIAL CONDITION —SLAVERY, A.D. 1605—1800

Our territory in W. Indies—Interest not to be measured by area or population—Changes in their relative importance in Empire—Not a Unity—Government and Law—Industrial System: Sugar-planting—The Slave Trade: Chiefly retained by Home Influence—Slavery—Considerations affecting W. Indian mind—Alleged Cruelties considered.

In the shaping of the destiny of the beautiful islands of the Caribbean Sea, Britain cannot claim the first place, either in order of time or in extent of influence. Her territories there have been less extensive than those of either Spain or France. The Spaniards secured the magnificent island of Cuba, itself containing more acres than the whole of the rest of the Archipelago; a share of the second island, Hispaniola (San Domingo), the whole of the third, Porto Rico, and the fifth, Trinidad. The French had the remainder of Hispaniola (Hayti), and several of the choicest of the smaller ones, Martinique, Guadeloupe,

Digitized by Google

Grenada, St. Vincent, St. Lucia. The share of Britain was at first only some smaller islands, occupied in the Stuart period, after more or less conflict with the Spanish or French in all except Barbados. The others were Antigua, St. Kitts (partly), and Nevis. The aggregate area of our territory at the time of the death of Charles I. was about the same as that of the single French island Martinique. Still these gave us our foothold in the region, and from them we constantly increased our holding during the great wars of the 17th and 18th centuries. The redistributions followed the course of our prosperity in naval and military war, and therefore showed almost continuously to our advantage. The decay of Spain was our first opportunity, and Spain's great enemy, Cromwell, the man to seize it. At that time the term "America" covered both the islands and the mainland across the Atlantic; and Cromwell was aiming a blow at Spanish power in America when he sent his expedition against Hispaniola. It failed there, but the leaders made a compensatory stroke by securing the fourth island in size, Jamaica; this acquisition at once increased our territory tenfold, and for a century it remained at that extent. In the 18th-century wars our antagonism was with France, and thus we never pressed farther upon the great Spanish islands than acquiring Trinidad. But in the great French wars the Caribbean Sea was always one of the centres of conflict, and islands kept changing hands continually, being restored or retained when Treaties were made as the necessities of negotiation required. The close of the century saw our territory augmented by the islands of Trinidad (from Spain), Grenada, St. Vincent, St. Lucia, and Dominica (from France). In addition to these gains we had secured by settlement a position in the Bahamas, and another on the Central American Coast at Belize (British Honduras), and we also took over from the

Digitized by Google

Dutch the western portion of their territory on the South American Continent, viz., the basins of the rivers Essequibo, Demerara, and Berbice. These latter, grouped later under the name British Guiana, as well as the Colony of Honduras, are usually included under the general term "West Indies," and the term is so employed in this history.

There has been no further change of territory affecting Britain: France has lost Hayti as a Colony, and Spain St. Domingo; both of these have become Republics, connected with their mother countries by ties of tradition and social habit. Those of our Colonies which we acquired by conquest are even now not British in the full sense of the term; in language, religion, and social affinities they retain many elements of their Spanish, French, or Dutch periods, and they have not so much local government as our purely British Colonies. St. Vincent and Grenada were acquired somewhat earlier than the others, and are more Anglicized; but in Trinidad, Dominica and St. Lucia French and Spanish *patois* prevail, and the Roman Church predominates.

In the first period covered by the present history we are to deal, therefore, with only a portion of our present territories; with the thoroughly British Colonies of Jamaica, Barbados, the Leeward Islands, Antigua, St. Kitts and Nevis. In our second period, *i.e.* after 1800, the area includes also Trinidad, Dominica, St. Vincent, Grenada, St. Lucia, with the Bahamas and British Guiana.

Small as is the total area of the British West Indies there are grounds for an interest to the English mind which is not to be measured by the numbers of their square miles, or even of their inhabitants. These islands saw the first attempts of British people to Europeanize tropical lands; to apply British character to the shaping of industrial and social system in

Digitized by Google

circumstances which necessitated the employment of tropical races, of other colour than our own, and of lower range of mental capacity. They show us the Plantation type of life. For this purpose they may be studied along with the Colonies of Virginia and Carolina, but in the islands the system is more isolated and in clearer light. There were no such neighbours as those of New England and Pennsylvania to modify the system; and their tropical climate—they all lie within 20° of the Equator—rendered them more dependent upon the black races for physical labour than even South Carolina and Georgia.

And again, small as they were, they were exuberantly fertile; thus they were able to place Great Britain in a position to supply herself from within her own territory with a staple article which she would otherwise have had to seek from France or Spain; possibly had she not possessed these sugar-plantations of her own we might earlier have reached the era of Treaties of Commerce, but this is hardly so likely as the other possibility, that we should have gone on to acquire one or more of the greater islands. And therefore it came about that the cultivation of these little islands was so fostered by British capital that their total produce was out of all proportion to their acreage when compared with Cuba and Brazil.

A considerable enhancement of their importance in British eyes followed upon the loss of our North American Colonies. Our remaining possessions on the St. Lawrence were too far north and were but of little consideration at that time. So for at least two generations the West India islands represented practically our share in the great discovery of Columbus. The Governorship of Jamaica was considered next in importance to the Lord-Lieutenancy of Ireland and the Governor-Generalship of our dominion in India. Among the Governors have been an Earl

Digitized by Google

of Carlisle, a Duke of Albemarle, a Duke of Rutland, a Duke of Manchester, Sir Eyre Coote, a Marquis of Sligo, and Earls of Mulgrave and Elgin. It was hardly as a merely complimentary expression that the great Admiral Rodney, in thanking the Jamaican House of Assembly for their vote of a statue in commemoration of his splendid victory (1783) over the French Fleet that had been threatening our islands, said: "The preservation of Jamaica was always at my heart, as I ever did, and ever shall, look upon it as the brightest jewel in the British diadem."

But with the advance of the 19th century the rank of these islands in the British imperial system has constantly declined, even though they have been extended as described above. Other Colonies have grown up in Canada, Australasia, South Africa; our Indian Empire has been extended and consolidated; and our adoption of a Free Trade policy did away with much of the special commercial interest in our own territories. French sugar became as welcome as British. And a burning grievance arose in West Indian minds that even the countries which refused to abolish slavery suffered nothing at our hands on that account, but that we found the slave-grown sugar of Cuba and Brazil as sweet as the produce of the emancipated negroes of our own dominions. And so our Sugar Colonies in the Caribbean Sea sank in the scale of relative importance as members of the Imperial system.

In thinking of these islands it is to be borne in mind that they are far from being a unity. The term "British West Indies" is a real case of *geographical* expression; it is in no sense a *political* term. They never had a common Government, but each hung on to Great Britain by its own thread, except that there was some grouping in the case of some of the small ones. Jamaica is 1000 miles from Barbados, and no

Digitized by Google

exports or imports passed between them; each traded direct with Europe or America. Even now there are many West Indians who have never been on any island than their own, except for a few hours' landing while in harbour, although they have often visited "home." They always had common cause, naturally, by reason of their industrial affinities: but it was in London that co-operation for any purpose was devised, as a rule. One of the few cases of inter-communion is the highly creditable action after the tremendous hurricane of 1831, when Barbados, St. Vincent, and St. Lucia, which lay in the pathway of its ravages, were assisted by a large subscription from the islands unaffected, as an addition to the House of Commons vote of £100,000. And it is pleasant to note that in this subscription French Martinique and Danish St. Thomas and Santa Cruz came forward to help.

The Government of the older Colonies was in the main a reproduction of the English Constitution. A Governor from "home" represented the Crown, and some chief offices were Crown appointments; there was a Governor's Council of residents, selected by the Crown; and an elected Assembly. Antigua, St. Kitts, and Nevis had a Governor in common ("Leeward Islands"), but they had each a local legislature.

In Foreign affairs and in commercial policy the Colonies were of course without independent rights, and the same may be said of the relations of Church and State.

The laws of the Colonies were—(1) The Common Law of England, (2) such Statute laws of England as were in force at the time of the settlement of the Colony: both of these "so far as applicable"; and (3) local enactments. For example, it was declared by English judges that British Acts of Parliament since 1655 did not run in Jamaica unless it was specially

Digitized by Google

provided in them; to have force, adoption by the Jamaica Legislature was indispensable. The enactments of the Colonial legislatures, on the other hand, required ratification by the Crown in order to become permanent. All money votes, however, were in their own hands, except that in Barbados and Antigua there was for many years a 4½ per cent. customs duty, which, as may be supposed, gave rise to constant friction, especially as it was usually scandalously misapplied at home.

The Industrial System was determined by Nature, in the prolific return which these islands gave to the cultivation of the Sugar-cane, just as European taste for this commodity was growing. In the earliest days of settlement there was no foresight of this. If any single plant was prominently in mind then, it was tobacco; but the early settlers were occupied also in growing cocoa, coffee, spices, indigo, and fruits, and in exporting the valuable timbers. The Portuguese brought the Sugar-cane to Brazil from the East; some Dutch settlers in Brazil were ejected and took refuge in Barbados; thence Governor Modyford took it to Jamaica, and Colonel Codrington to Antigua. So that by the intervention of man an Eastern plant was conveyed across oceans to become the main source of prosperity in regions on another side of the world; in the distribution of plant-life for man's benefit nature was brought into subservience by art.

The success of Sugar was prodigious: in Barbados the best of the island was speedily planted over, and 50,000 settlers were soon at work in a space no larger than the Isle of Wight. This led to two important results of a social character. It settled that large-scale production should be the method of industry; the Plantation system, not small holdings: and it compelled resort to an external source for labourers. The original inhabitants, the Caribs, had either

Digitized by Google

disappeared or were intractable. None were found in Jamaica or Barbados; in some other islands there were some left of the more savage type, and in no sense a source of labour-supply. Following up the plan already initiated by the Portuguese and Spaniards for their territories, the Atlantic was crossed, and the Continent of Africa was resorted to for this purpose. The West Coast of that unfortunate Continent from the river Senegal to Angola was "cupped," as M. de Voguë says, for regular supplies of labour to the American Plantations from Virginia to Brazil. It was *not* the good missionary Las Casas who first invented the plan; he found it already in operation; but he certainly knew that his dear Indians in Mexico and the islands could not toil as labourers—they perished like flies if compelled—and he saw that the Negroes could. So he joined in commendation of the Negro system, hoping, of course, all the while that they would be settled in the Plantations on a Christian basis of life.

This is not the place for an exhaustive handling of the subject of Negro Slavery. But the condition of the masses is of primary importance in every true review of a period of Church history, and a history of the Church in the West Indies would wholly miss its point which did not give careful attention to the social system in vogue for so long a period of that history.

I. THE SLAVE TRADE.

Something of approval may be said of this traffic in the abstract. It was a method of deportation of labour from a place of abundant supply to a place of profitable demand. It was a method of greatly augmenting the productivity of the earth, and the supply of the legitimate wants of mankind. But it

Digitized by Google

offended absolutely against deeper principles. It was based upon injustice and tyranny, and was carried on with disgraceful neglect of the fundamental duties of the strong to the weak. The mercenary shippers whose visits kept West Africa in constant internecine warfare, and whose arrangements for the Atlantic voyage are for ever execrable in human memory under the name of "the Middle Passage," are matched only by the merchants and planters who on arrival ruthlessly disregarded any relics of family ties; and the two together must bear the irrevocable judgment which history has recorded against the "Traffic" as it was conducted. In that reference in a certain contract to 10,000 *tons of negroes* to be delivered, the callousness of civilized man reached a degree which must remain in permanence as a proof of the possibilities of evil of which human nature is capable.

But we are bound to notice that there is evidence that the weight of blame should fall not upon the Colonists, but upon the merchants of Britain. The Slave Colonies in America were all ready to let the Trade cease; and the Assembly of Jamaica was at one time similarly disposed. In 1774 this body passed two Bills limiting the importation; these Bills were *disallowed at home.* Two historians of Jamaica do, indeed, refrain from considering that these Bills were really aimed at limitation for its own sake; the tax proposed to be imposed on imported slaves was, they think, only for revenue. And indeed it is somewhat difficult to see how men could really desire limitation so long as they acquiesced in the method of working the Negroes to rapid exhaustion, as was frequently the openly approved plan. And farther, in 1797 the Jamaica planters certainly receded from any such position, and claimed the continuance of the Trade as their right. But whatever is to be said about the Colonists, the conduct of the supporters of

Digitized by Google

the Trade at home was explicit; the merchants of Bristol and Liverpool petitioned against the Bills of 1774, and the Secretary of State accepted their contention to the full when he said—it is degrading to write the words as coming from a British statesman—"We cannot allow the Colonies to check, or discourage in any degree, a traffic so beneficial to the nation." It stands out fairly clear that whilst the planters depended on this traffic, and neglected to adopt methods of employment and life which would allow the Negro to increase naturally, the Trade, as a trade, was not a colonial enterprise at all. It was worked from Liverpool to the extent of one-half, London one quarter, and Bristol the remainder. And to those mercantile centres went all the direct profits. At one time the City of London was on the point of agreeing to its abolition, and even voted a petition in that sense; but Liverpool was indefatigable and drew them back again.

And it is farther to be remembered that we made this Trade a leading object of public policy. At the Peace of Utrecht, 1713, we insisted on reserving it for ourselves, not only for our own Colonies, but also for those of Spain.

II. SLAVERY ITSELF.

(i.) The opinions of enlightened and thoughtful people were at variance. Even Christianity—as interpreted at that time, at least—offered no decisive criterion as to its rightness or its iniquity. We find among rulers Charles V. (and his Confessor); Cardinal Ximenes; Pope Leo X.; and perhaps Queen Elizabeth (although she knighted Hawkins with his shockingly infamous crest, "a Negro, manacled") protesting against it. But on the other hand Cromwell

Digitized by Google

renewed a Charter to engage in the Slave Trade; the unquestionably philanthropic Moravian Brethren themselves held slaves so late as 1844; the Baptists, not usually given to any mincing of matters when they have a clear light, in their instructions to their early Missionaries deprecated opposition to it in slave-holding countries; and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, as trustees for two estates in Barbados, were unable to see their way to anticipate the general emancipation of 1834.

(ii.) We shall never arrive at a just judgment as to the character of the Planters of Virginia and Carolina or the West Indies if we persist in assuming that the Slave system was *invented* by them, and that they thereby forfeit something of their claim to be thought true Englishmen, devoted to constitutional liberties, but should rather be associated with the despotic political systems of Portugal, Spain and France. The point of their contention was that they did as a matter of fact proceed on old English constitutional lines. There never was a time when all Englishmen had *political* liberties, and the time was but very short in which full *civil* liberty had been possessed by the masses of the people. The Planters acknowledged that it was going back, but they considered that it was only for a century or two: resuming a semi-feudal position in relation to the tillers of the soil. It must be remembered that there had been such a thing as "Villenage," or serfdom, in England; and that the labouring class had passed out of it so gradually that no man could say when it ceased. So late as Edward VI.'s reign, in a law for branding runaways the word "slave" occurs 38 times; slaves were manumitted so late as the reign of Elizabeth; the status of both "serf" and "slave" were recognized by English law in 1570, says a great contemporary jurist, Sir Thomas Smith. Macaulay says that traces

Digitized by Google

were to be seen even in the Stuart period; while in Scotland there are records of certain rights over serfs so late as 1750. So that it is plain that we may go so far as to say that English "villenage" and the American Slave system actually overlapped.

Nor was it simply that milder form of villenage which meant permanent attachment to an estate, not to the owner, that persisted so long. The most recent investigator, Vingradoff (*Villainage in England*, published 1892), leaves no room for doubt here. "The majority of the peasants were *villains*, and the legal conception of villainage has its roots not in the connection of the villain with the soil, but in his personal dependence on his lord." Again: "As to the general aspect of villainage in the legal theory of English feudalism there can be no doubt: the lords are owners not only of the chattels but of the bodies of their *ascripticii*, they may transfer them wherever they please, and sell or otherwise alienate them, if they like" (p. 44). This writer further shows that the "villain" had no rights against his lord, except that the Courts intervened in his protection against "loss of life or injury to his body."

If the status of villenage proved efficacious in guiding the social advancement of England in mediæval times, is it surprising that the Planters of America insensibly revived it in their treatment of the uncivilized beings who were introduced year by year as workers on their estates? These new-comers from Africa were hardly fitted for civil liberty. (Political liberty the natives do not even now possess, either in the West Indies, in Cape Colony, or even in India of course.) They came from different tribes, and spoke different languages; three-fourths of them had been "slaves" in their own country; they had in common only their physical endowments, a low degree of intelligence, an indisposition for toil, a very slight range

Digitized by Google

of self-control, and abundance of superstitions. Are we, even at this day, to say that to fall back upon the policy which had prevailed in England for centuries was in itself a proceeding *primâ facie* either senseless or iniquitous? And in the later part of our period the Planters' friends in educated society in England were not backward in directing attention to the fact that the abolition of serfdom in England did not mean universal abolition, but that it still prevailed in several continental nations. This line of defence led Lord Brougham to think of going to Germany, Russia, Hungary, and especially Poland, to inquire into the actual conditions, in order to reply to the Planters' friends—a thing he would have found very difficult to do.

III. THE CRUELTIES OF WEST INDIAN SLAVERY.

A system may have palliations when viewed in the light of the slow progress of humanity. But in the manner of its working there may be qualities for which no palliation can be found. It is impossible not to acknowledge that in the manner of working Slavery there were defects amounting to culpable and lamentable outrages upon humanity. Cruelties of an odious character occurred too often; and even the ordinary discipline of a large household, but especially of an estate, involved proceedings which can only be designated as abominable. Here and there favoured estates may have been carried on in an atmosphere of simplicity and *bonhomie;* very often this may have been the desire, if not the actual achievement, of planters of the type cleverly sketched for us by Harriet Beecher Stowe in Mr. Selby and Mr. St. Clair. But masters were not all in easy

Digitized by Google

circumstances, and "driving" was often imperative, or seemed to be so; and they were not ubiquitous, while their overseers were of too low a morale to be much influenced by any considerations of humanity when once seasoned to their "duties." And so, beyond question, the cry of the African went up to Heaven.

Still, as recorders of the affairs of men and not of angels, we are bound to ask how the ruling class in the Plantation Colonies stand amongst their fellows. In so comparing them we must remember—

(*a*) The greatest severities took place in the treatment of the Negroes who had newly arrived. Fresh from the wild life of Guinea, many of these were restless in the extreme; and when amongst them were found some warriors, victims of misfortune in tribal wars, and sold at high prices for their superior physical endowments, it is plain that to control them on a remote valley-estate was no matter for easy treatment. The *Coromantins* especially were an untamable tribe, and very forcibly impressed the Jamaican mind with the need of vigilance and severity. The French and Spanish colonists were wiser than ours, and would not knowingly admit slaves of this tribe at all. But as Jamaica was very freely supplied from it, we are not surprised to learn that it was there that insurrections broke out with the greatest frequency.[1] And, on the

[1] But in connection with this tribe, that better things might have been done is opened out in a passage in a letter of Christopher Codrington (Dec. 30, 1701). Writing of the murder of a Major Master (in Antigua) by his slaves, he says: "I am afraid he was guilty of some unusual Act of Severity, or rather some indignity towards the Coromantes, for they are not only the best and most faithfull of all our slaves, but are really all born Heroes: there is a difference between them and all other Negroes beyond what it is possible for your lordship to conceive. There was never a Rascall or a Coward of that Nation. Intrepid to the last degree. Not a man of them but will stand to be cut to pieces without a Sigh or a Groan: grateful and obedient to a Kind Master, but implacably revengeful when ill-treated. This

Digitized by Google

other hand, the heart-burning and heart-hardening thereby caused affected most injuriously the Jamaican temper. We can but regret that a wiser policy was not adopted when we know that in Virginia it was only after lapse of a considerable time that the legislature shows any perceptible sign of dreading insubordination or insurrection at all.

(*b*) It is true that after some of the insurrections the Planters acted in a frenzy born of panic. After a rising in Antigua, in 1736, five Negroes were broken on the wheel, six hung alive in chains (one of these was eight days and nine nights in dying), fifty-eight burnt at the stake. But we must take cognizance of contemporary methods of dealing with insubordination and crime. We might read Macaulay's account of the English treatment of the misguided supporters of Monmouth's rebellion, a much less formidable affair than a Negro insurrection on islands where the whites were in a small minority; or, much later, Sir Charles Napier on the severe floggings in the army, or John Howard's accounts of the treatment of the wretched inhabitants of our gaols, or Sir Samuel Romilly on the atrocities of our criminal code. It is along with these contemporary actions, not with our subsequently reformed criminal procedure, that even the cruelties of West Indian slavery must be judged.

(*c*) There were considerable differences between the several Colonies in this respect. The palm for mildness goes to the Leeward Islands, especially Antigua, and the burden of greatest reproach falls upon Jamaica. But here again let us observe some operative causes: the folly of the Jamaicans in accepting the Coromantins; the presence in her wilder

was the opinion, too, of my Father, who had studied the genius and temper of all kinds of Negroes for forty-five years." Let us be glad that some of this fine strain of blood is even yet coursing in the veins of our West Indian fellow-subjects.

Digitized by Google

recesses of Maroons or escaped Negroes, living outside the pale of government, and a constant incentive to the more turbulent among the slaves to make a stroke for liberty like theirs; and a greater prevalence of absenteeism than elsewhere. Of these causes two were faults, certainly; but they were not exactly cruelty or barbarity, and so our judgment to some extent may be mitigated.

(*d*) The West Indian writers insist on our comparing the Negroes in slavery in the Colonies with Negroes in their native tribes in Africa. The sources from which they issued were captives in war, criminals, wives or children sold, and domestic slaves. Long, the historian of Jamaica, persuaded himself that ninety-nine out of a hundred belonged to the first two of these classes, and therefore were already doomed to slavery or under sentence of death. Accordingly he selects lugubrious pictures from travellers in Africa of the lives of such people there. Bridges is somewhat double-faced; he condemns the traffic and applauds Wilberforce, but yet when opposing Great Britain in her treatment of Jamaica, he considers himself free to make full use of the above argument of Long. Every one can see that there is a great deal of force in it, but the palliative force claimed for it is not so powerful as these advocates represent.

(*e*) There was disadvantage in the great amount of "Home Rule" which prevailed in the British Colonies in comparison with those of France and Spain. Long acknowledges this with reluctance, and he quotes Montesquieu as showing that a Monarchy was better suited than a Free State to the direction of a slave system. In the Spanish and French Colonies the status of the slave was regulated by Imperial authority. The "Codes," or systems of laws and regulations, were formed at home, and there-

Digitized by Google

fore were conceived in a less one-sided spirit than was likely to be the case with local legislatures composed of Planters and their dependents. Both the French *Code Noir* and the Spanish Code contained provisions which we could much wish had been in force in our islands, and removed from being tampered with by the employers. But the actual records show, it must be allowed on our behalf, that we may easily over-estimate what might have been done from home. Allusion has been made to the sinister influences at home which operated upon the Trade itself. In another very important matter, the attachment of each slave to the estate on which he was born, and his consequent possession of a rudimentary "home," it was the Planters who passed a law that slaves should not be seized and carried away by a Planter's creditors, it was the home authorities who disallowed this humane provision. In practice, however, it is certain that it was very unusual for the West Indian Planters to break up families. And on another point, the efforts of the Colonial Governments to check absenteeism, by placing the permanently absent at a disadvantage in comparison with those who made their homes where their fortunes were accumulated, were relentlessly crushed by the home authorities.

We may therefore accept the claim of an able living West Indian, Mr. C. S. Salmon, that after all the Planters were Englishmen, placed in a false position. And we may go further and say, that the blame, which is their due by reason of their reverting to a social system out of which the British Isles had emerged, must be fully shared by the nation at large, for it was to Great Britain that the lion's share of the profits of the retrograde system fell, and not to the colonial communities themselves.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II

SOCIAL LIFE IN THE SLAVERY PERIOD

Five Classes of Society: Ruling Whites, Subordinate Whites, White Bondservants, Coloured People and Free Blacks, Slaves—Family Life—Higher Life—Dependence.

"THE two great forming agencies of the world's history have been the religious and the economic," says Professor Marshall in the opening sentences of his *Principles of Economics*. In the West Indies we have a society formed exclusively by the latter agency; the whole social and moral order was determined by industrial considerations; the Plantation system settled the whole fabric of society.

Society in the West Indies was divided into five classes, as sharp-cut in many features as Hindu castes.

I. THE RULING WHITES.

The Planter in his industrial capacity was a complex personality: at once a landlord, a farmer, and a manufacturer. He owned the land, he grew the canes, he manufactured the sugar, molasses, and rum. An "Estate" meant not only cane-fields and food-grounds, but also a sugar factory. The complexity made a large capital necessary; small properties proved unable to compete, and certain ten-acre holdings that were started in some islands were speedily absorbed. A Plantation of 500 acres would

Digitized by Google

have 150 picked acres in Cane, the remainder in provision and pasture ground for estate consumption. Some 200 Negroes would be employed: the capital required would be about £80 an acre, £40,000. At the time of high prosperity in Jamaica there were some 700 such estates.

The Planter himself in "the Great House" overlooking the buildings and yard, lived much as a combined English squire and large farmer might do in England; the estate supplied his household with a large portion of its provisions, and from twenty to forty slaves were set apart for domestic services.

This was, however, the condition of earlier times rather than of later; as fortunes were made planters resorted to Great Britain and left their estates in the hands of agents. Their representative was entrusted with a power of attorney, and so came to be styled an Attorney, the designation still in vogue for Agent or Factor. A competent man would have several estates entrusted to him; as many as ten or fifteen. On one of these he resided, or perhaps on his own; the others he visited at intervals and received regular visits and reports from his overseers. In 1796, out of 769 Jamaican proprietors 606 were absentees. This was a calamity. And the residents were alive to it even in its earlier stages, but, as already mentioned, their endeavours to arrest the evil were blocked at home. An old English precedent of Richard II.'s time in England, itself restricting non-residence of landowners, was pleaded in vain; the Jamaican Act was disallowed, and later Governors went out with standing instructions always to veto at the outset any special taxation on absentees. Similarly when the Assembly proposed to require a greater contribution of "deficiency whites,"—*i. e.* support of a certain number of white people required to make up a fixed proportion to the coloured,—from absentee owners, their measures

Digitized by Google

were annulled by absentee influences brought to bear at Westminster.

As time went on the Planters almost ceased to be men of independent capital: mortgages, jointures, annuities to younger brothers and sisters, and other charges necessitated heavy borrowing; the margin left to the nominal owner was small, and the estates were worked at high pressure in order to secure immediate profits; and they often changed hands.

The Merchants.—Their business was to buy the produce from the estates, and to export it; and to import foreign provisions, tools, clothes, hardware, and articles of luxury. Firms in Great Britain had agencies in the islands, and a system of consignment set in, by which a Planter received supplies as he required them, and was bound to hand over his whole produce as it was realized. This relation of the producers to the merchants sapped the proper independence of the former class, and, indirectly, of the Colonies themselves. For example, on the failure of the Higgensons of Liverpool it was found that one-third of the whole produce of Barbados was in their hands. Such merchants as resided and their principal agents were of the same social standing as the Planters and Attorneys.

The Professors comprised the higher Government officials, lawyers, doctors, and clergy.

The Governor and some high officials came out from home. Unlike the American Colonies the West Indies never attained to election of their own Governors. Several of the offices were of great value by reason of the fees attached to their functions: in Jamaica the Colonial Secretary, the Provost-Marshal, and the Prothonotary drew from £6000 to £9000 a year apiece. But a sinister influence soon prevailed here also; by a discreditable and unjust abuse these offices were conferred upon Court favourites or Party

Digitized by Google

supporters, who never went out at all, or even thought of doing so. The "Patentees" were allowed to appoint permanent deputies, and to lease out the revenues of the offices. For example, an office of £1050 was let for £840 a year, leaving £210 for the lessee, who did the whole of the work. Two notable men of fashion, whose contributions to literature cause us to wish that they had derived income from more wholesome sources than these abuses, were Horace Walpole and George Greville of the *Journals*. "Horatio Walpole Esquire" was Surveyor and Auditor-General for America, and Greville, who was Clerk to the Privy Council at home, was also Colonial Secretary of Jamaica; it is probable that neither of these ever saw the scene of his supposed duties. In vain did the Colonial Legislatures protest: in 1699, 1711, 1715, local Acts were passed against these abuses, but they were disallowed. Of course the holders of the leases squeezed out fees to the utmost; and it was said that the fees on shipping paid to the "Controller of Customs" at Kingston were five times higher than those charged at American ports. In 1782, Lord Lansdowne, the Secretary of State, interposed, and forbad the issue of patents apart from residence; but two generations passed before the reform was really made effective. In 1814 there were still ninety-four patents in the Colonies held by fifty-five absentees (including *all* the Colonial Secretaryships), of which ninety had been issued since 1782. But in 1834 the number had been reduced to six.[1]

The Lawyers.—For barristers it was necessary to have been called to the English Bar, although some-

[1] A similar state of things had been allowed in the other Colonies. In 1814 six Canadian offices were in this position. But no Colony ever quite saw the gross abuse which inflicted on Virginia a non-resident Governor (Earl of Orkney) for forty years.

Digitized by Google

times the Governor would issue a licence to practise. Solicitors could either qualify in England or serve articles in the Colony. In Jamaica there were some eighty or ninety solicitors, and the Bar usually included some men of ability.

The Doctors.—A similar condition was supposed to be in force; but as matter of fact the very low qualification represented by a certificate of the Society of Apothecaries sufficed, and indeed in some Colonies there has been no Medical Register at all up to the present day. A year or two with an apothecary, or a voyage or two in a merchant ship as "ship's surgeon" sufficed. Long is very severe on the profession, and introduces a highly-coloured sketch of the murderous career of a typical adventurer. As each estate had regular medical attendance there was certainty of considerable employment, although of a humble kind. Taken as a whole it was only the few doctors with proper qualifications who ranked as professional men; the others associated naturally with inferior grades. But this was not an uncommon occurrence elsewhere in times when a ship's surgeon was engaged to shave the officers as well as to doctor the crew.

By the Planters, the Merchants, and the Lawyers the administration of public affairs was carried on. The franchise was very high, and was hedged about in various ways, so that both the Assembly and the local Vestries were wholly in their hands. They were also the Magistrates and the Grand Jury, and they officered the local Militia.

II. THE SUBORDINATE FREE WHITES.

On the Estates there were managers called Overseers, in receipt of salaries from £100 to £200, of whom the best might aspire to become Attorneys. Under these were "Book-keepers," so called, who

Digitized by Google

personally directed the operations in the field and in the boiling-house, with some £50 to £80 a year, and on their way to becoming Overseers. The ranks of this class were constantly replenished from Great Britain; many of them fell speedy victims to disease or vicious living. The young men (and there were very few old ones among them) lived together in a kind of barrack with the Overseer; none of them were permitted to marry. A melancholy picture of frustrated hopes of friends at home, and of characters fatally deteriorated or ruined is drawn by an observer in Jamaica (Stewart) so late as 1823. Only a minority of these men lived to middle life.

There were a few white men who were master-mechanics; some employed on the estates, others working independently, perhaps with ten or a dozen slaves of their own. Then there were the clerks in the offices and the retail stores; in Jamaica the store-keepers were mostly Jews. As there grew up a "coloured" population, by mixture of Whites and Negroes, the mechanical trades and clerks' work and the smaller stores gradually fell into their hands, for the most part.

III. THE WHITE BONDSERVANTS.

Soon after the occupation of these islands, free use of them, along with Virginia, was made for the transportation of British prisoners and criminals, and especially of political prisoners. These were delivered, like cargoes, by bills of lading, and sold, on arrival, to different Estates for varying terms, sometimes for life, and were known as "indented servants." The remnant which survived Cromwell's sack of Drogheda, seven or eight thousand prisoners taken after the battle of Dunbar, a large number captured in the battle of Worcester, and after the insurrection at

Digitized by Google

Salisbury; the deluded participators in Monmouth's rebellion; conspirators in the Rye House Plot; and rebels of 1716 were deported in this way.

And besides these, there were the clearings of the ordinary gaols; notably rogues and vagabonds from Scotland shortly before the Act of Union opened a new chapter in her history.

These deportations provided material for many a novel and melodrama, especially when associated as it was with "kidnapping," *i. e.* the forcible abduction of men and women for sale, under the guise of being convicts and deserters, or by fraudulent methods of other kinds. It is a grim episode in the history of the movement of Labour. Probably only a fourth of the transported ever found their way back across the Atlantic; the fate of the others was more pitiable than that of the majority of the African slaves themselves, and moved the warm compassion of contemporary writers like Ligon and Esquimelling.[1] It is a relief to learn that the system had been stopped before the time of Long (1774).

There were also among the "indented servants" a few free immigrants, who came out under indentures for terms of years. But their experience was a sad one; little difference could be discovered between their condition and that of the transported offenders. The conditions of life were intolerable, but there was of course no return until the indenture was worked out. In Barbados there was a settlement made of some poor Whites on small holdings. They did not prosper; and their position between the Upper Whites

[1] The tales of Defoe, *Captain Jack* and *Moll Flanders*, contain so much that is coarse and brutal in both words and scenes that they may well be left on the upper shelves now. The pictures drawn by Sir W. Besant in *For Faith and Freedom* are both faithful and vivid, and this novel may perhaps be taken as the final representation of this now long-closed episode.

Digitized by Google

and the great mass of the people left them an isolated group, with disastrous results. A remnant still remains there, and every traveller acknowledges to a feeling as if in the presence of something spectral and non-natural when these "outcasts" are met with in the two or three places where they have resided ever since.

Such was the grouping of the White inhabitants of the Colonies. A few words as to the sources from which they were drawn.

There were the original settlers of St. Kitts, Barbados, and Antigua, men of some property, accompanied by a few mechanics; the officers and sailors who stayed behind after the Jamaica expedition; many sailors who remained at the close of the Spanish War of 1721. Then there were many of the men engaged in piracy and buccaneering in the Caribbean Sea and along the Spanish Main, who finally settled down on the islands. There were also some cases of State emigration; the Council of State in Ireland in Cromwell's time despatched a thousand Irishmen and a thousand Irish girls, who naturally became absorbed chiefly in the bondservant class. Then there were Cavalier Refugees of substance who fled from Cromwell, and Commonwealth men who hastened across the Atlantic at the Restoration, including at least two of the "Regicides"—the celebrated Mace ordered to be removed by Cromwell is said to have found its resting-place in Jamaica. A vein of strong commonsense was struck when these opposing partisans found themselves at close quarters on the islands, and a social treaty of peace was entered upon which included the absolute tabooing of the epithets "Cavalier" and "Roundhead" in Barbados society; but the peace was not regarded as covering some members of the Society of Friends, who therefore removed to Jamaica. Then our colonists at Surinam in South America were

Digitized by Google

deported to the islands when that Colony was exchanged with the Dutch for New Amsterdam in North America (now New York), in 1675; as were the remnants of the unfortunate Scotch Colony at Darien twenty years afterwards. Antigua and St. Kitts received with welcome a number of Huguenot refugees from France, who speedily intermarried with the English settlers.

It was chiefly in the earlier days that people of substance and steadiness of character went out to the West Indian Plantations. In later times there was a great medley of arrivals, and the result was a state of things which causes Long bitterly to reproach Great Britain in comparison with France, which was much more vigilant for the good order and wholesome constitution of her colonial dependencies than we were.

Amongst the young men who went out as book-keepers, on their way to becoming overseers and attorneys, there was always a large element of Scottish lads, insomuch that Long estimates that one-third of the ruling class in Jamaica were Scotch—including one hundred Campbells. "The Scotchman hugging the Creole" was the West Indian parable of the cotton-tree clasped by its gigantic creepers and fading under their unremitting demand for nourishment. Nevertheless the parable is not to be forced; the Scotch lads brought with them as good as they received, and Long, who had abundant sources of observation, sets down his opinion that in the West Indies both Scotchmen and Irishmen flourished better than Englishmen; a conclusion made not unlikely by the achievements of these two nationalities in other parts of our outer empire.

Digitized by Google

IV. THE COLOURED PEOPLE AND THE FREE BLACKS.

As time went on there grew up a considerable class of people of mixed blood. Inauspicious for the most part in the circumstances of their birth, in the Slavery times, physically weaker than the Negroes, and intellectually weaker than the Whites, the members of this intermediate group naturally betook themselves to the mechanical trades such as blacksmiths, masons, and carpenters, to clerkships and to storekeeping. There were also a few Negroes who had been freed or allowed to earn extra money sufficient to purchase freedom; these were of course men of some merit, and they took their places in the trades or stores. Very frequently people of this class possessed a slave or two themselves. Dissociated as they were from the upper class and separated from the slave class by their own natural ambition, it was among these that the religious and educational efforts of the Missionaries found a most congenial field of operation. In Jamaica there was a peculiar group, not integral with the social life of the Colony, but important, as has been already indicated, by its influence on the minds of the more energetic of the Slaves, namely, the Free Negroes of the mountains. They are known as Maroons, or mountaineers. One group of them was composed of the Spanish slaves who fled to the mountains on our arrival—other groups were composed of the slaves who occasionally succeeded in escaping from bondage. These Maroons seem ever hovering around the horizon of Jamaican history, keeping the Whites in a temper of hostility and the Slaves in a simmering feeling that their bondage was artificial, as the Negro was evidently quite able to sustain himself in joyous freedom if only the White man's greed would allow it. Many wars took place: in 1796 serious attempts to subdue them

Digitized by Google

were made and many were captured and deported. After emancipation the remnant were admitted to all rights and privileges.

V. THE SLAVES.

Grouped according to their employment, and consequent varieties of social life, these fall into four divisions:

a. Mechanics: the Estate carpenters and smiths.

b. Domestic Servants, both men and women.

c. Head-men: the head-"drivers" not only of cattle and mules but of the slave-labourers; head-watchmen, head boiling-house men.

d. The field-hands and the boiling-house people. These went in three gangs: the *First Gang*, the mature and able-bodied, both men and the strongest of the women; the *Second Gang*, the feebler and less efficient; the *Third Gang*, children, aged, and infirm.

The Slaves lived in wooden huts grouped near the works and screened by a thick plantation from the windows of the great house. They raised their own provisions: their clothes, rough and of extreme simplicity, were annually doled out.

As an indication of the relative numbers of these classes it may be observed that in 1774 Jamaica contained about 17,000 whites; 3500 coloured people and free negroes; and 170,000 slaves. The number of the governing families may be gauged from the fact that there were some 1500 "carriages of pleasure" on this island. A later view can be seen in an Antiguan return for 1820 (in which we must reckon that many women and children are included in the return for the lower classes, not in that for the higher); Official and Professional 163, Commerce 217, Mechanics 2531, superintendence of labour 338, Domestics 2017,

Digitized by Google

Labourers 13,202. Or again (in same year) the whole population, whites 1980, coloured and free 3895, slaves 31,064. Barbados in 1683 had 17,000 whites, 2381 "servants," 46,000 slaves; in 1773, 18,000 whites (coloured and free not stated), 68,000 slaves; in 1829, 15,000 whites, 5000 coloured and free, 83,000 slaves.

FAMILY LIFE.

Such industrial arrangements as these necessarily led to a melancholy condition in the domestic structure of society. Family life was disorganized, and there was wholesale relapse to inferior stages of morality. The institution of marriage was, practically, confined to the upper class. The Overseers and Book-keepers, though white men, were not furnished either with incomes which would support families or with houses in which to form homes; they lived a permanent barrack-life, and consorted with the Negro women without restraint, either from their own corrupted consciences or from public opinion. The coloured people having themselves issued chiefly from unregulated connections had little care for married life even when in independent circumstances; nine-tenths of the coloured women were "housekeepers" to white men, and in later times the religious conversion of some of these and their consequent renunciation of base connections gave the greatest offence to the white community. The slaves were not allowed to marry; nor indeed did their own stage of moral development lead them to desire the institution. It is not without foundation that Dr. Underhill, a Baptist visitor to the West Indies in 1860, on reviewing the history, claims that among the slaves Marriage—so far as it was found at all—was a purely Nonconformist

Digitized by Google

institution. With the upper class alone was family life retained; and even with them it was too frequently marred on the one hand by the prolonged absences of children at school in England, and on the other by the presence within the house itself of coloured "mistresses" and their offspring. The morality of the Planters was sapped by their surroundings; open concubinage and secret licentiousness were rampant, and the moral atmosphere was such as to render the lives of West Indian ladies well-nigh intolerable. The ladies bore themselves well. Bryan Edwards and Long disagree, indeed, in their opinions; but the weight of testimony is on the side of the West Indian matrons. And it is worthy of note that the oldest families were much the best, and that these reaped a manifest reward in greater longevity and in prolonged possession of property and position.

HIGHER LIFE.

It would be a matter of astonishment if in such a state of society the higher interests of human life had won attention or attained much development. In literature, science, and art, the history of the British West Indies is almost a blank. Where external Nature is so profuse in scenes of beauty, the Fine Arts have scarcely any place even at this day, except the arts of Music and Dancing. The bareness of the walls of the drawing-rooms and dining-rooms of West Indian homes is at once explained when adjournment is made to the verandah in which so much of domestic life is passed. The balmy air of these balconies combined with the soft light of the moon makes evenings indoors out of the question. And thus it follows that reading is replaced by Conversation. For such a public no genius was impelled to exert itself in litera-

Digitized by Google

ture. The books published were chiefly on the public affairs of the Colonies or on their Natural History; and most of these were written by visitors or temporary residents. Perhaps we may regard Bryan Edwards' *West Indies* and Long's *Jamaica* as the most nearly indigenous productions of a higher class in the period of Slavery. This is not different from what was the case in Virginia. Senator Lodge thinks that there was only one instance of any literary merit produced by that Colony, the writings of a Colonel Byrd; and, he says, "there were no arts, and literature also was next to nothing." So, too, of Georgia, he says, "there was no literature whatever." From which we infer that it was the state of society which was the chief bar, rather than the climate and the beauties of nature.

It has been suggested that the Protestant religion had something to do with this meagreness, inasmuch as the arts and luxuries were much more cultivated in the Colonies where the Roman Church predominated. Certainly the general outward appearance of life was more graceful in Martinique than in Jamaica, in Trinidad than in Barbados, and it is so still, to the eye of the visitor. But we hesitate in allowing any primary efficacy to religion in this respect, for reasons which will appear when we come to see presently how little of the Puritan there was in our Planters. We may be content with referring the difference to variety of æsthetic temperament, whether of racial origin, or otherwise.

But life in the West Indies had, of course, its æsthetic side in some form. The chief amusements were Conversation and Dancing. The conversation which chiefly filled the hours of social intercourse of the men was, after its kind, more artistic than the conversation of a community which is largely absorbed in reading. In furtherance of it great dinners were in vogue, and every opportunity was seized for holding

Digitized by Google

them. Grand Jury dinners, Militia dinners, Vestry dinners, even Road-jury dinners abounded; and the patron Saint of every parish received homage of this kind, if of no other. Seated round a table loaded with the varied products of these fertile regions, with the chief native liquor, rum, supplemented by imported wines and spirits of Europe, the hearts of West Indian Planters expanded with the chief enjoyment they knew, and tale and song and practical joke, too, filled up the long evening hours. For women and the younger men the supreme enjoyment was Dancing; in the late evenings and far into the cooler nights, in rooms with every window and door open to the ground and out on the balconies, this form of enjoyment was at hand, and it sufficed. In furtherance of both dinners and dances long visits were arranged; a family would transfer itself to a friend's house for a week, and acquaintances from the neighbourhood would be invited every evening. There were also the Parish races; occasional theatres and concerts in the towns; and at Kingston there was a Vauxhall and a Ranelagh gardens. There was but little shooting; and no other athletics.

The amusements of the inferior whites were of the bachelor order, drinking and cards being of necessity the prominent features. The slaves on their holidays and during most of the Sundays passed the time in dances and jubilations of the African type.

DEPENDENT CHARACTER.

These Colonies must on no account be judged as if they were self-centred communities; they were, in many ways, appanages of Great Britain. Their trade was regulated with a view to the interests of Great Britain, as Adam Smith shows; in fact they

Digitized by Google

were "exploited" for her benefit, as we should say to-day. And the growth of absenteeism led to a depletion of their natural wealth as the bulk of the net proceeds went direct to England. The situation is plainly shown in the attitude of the historian Long; when he is propounding his scheme for boarding-schools in Jamaica he sets about defending himself against the hostility which he knew would be aroused on the part of those persons in Britain who were profiting by the education of the boys and girls of the West Indian Planters.

We have seen how the chief offices were, many of them, nothing short of being money-sucking devices. Bryan Edwards estimates that at least £30,000 a year was remitted to England by the deputies for great officers in Jamaica alone. But this money loss was the least part of the mischief. The Colonies sank socially into inferior positions through the non-residence of officials, of owners of property, and of capitalists. "There never arose," says Mr. E. J. Payne, "in the British Plantations a class of wealthy and independent merchants like those of the French islands." Powerful expressions of the grievousness of the loss were placed on record in the Journals of the Legislatures, especially of Jamaica, for it is pleasant to notice that the evil was much less marked in the smaller Colonies. A society of which the upper class is chiefly composed of agents and deputies has never been taken as an ideal by any constructor of utopias. Roughley's account of the agents is depressing enough, and he is completely corroborated by what was found to be going on by "Monk" Lewis when he went over and took charge of his own estate for a time. We had in fact a patriarchal structure of society, but without the patriarchs.

It may be allowed that some truth lies in what Herman Merivale says about the absenteeism being

Digitized by Google

not wholly discreditable to English character. The conditions of life were so unfavourable to social and moral elevation that the more a man considered the best interests of his family the less likely was he to keep them in a Plantation-house if he could possibly afford to maintain a household in England; and naturally as soon as increased fortune allowed he followed his family home to London or Bath or Bristol. Still, as Merivale acknowledges, it was not very high morality to shirk all the disadvantages of a situation whilst flourishing on profits earned by those who had no option but to remain. It was, in fact, to quit the "world" for honour's sake, yet to sustain honour on the questionable profits of that very "world."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III

THE CHURCH IN THE SLAVERY PERIOD, DOWN TO 1800

The Church Established from outset—Toleration allowed—Provision for the Clergy and Churches—Irreligious character of many of original settlers—Government of the Church—The Bishop of London's Jurisdiction—The Governor as Ordinary—No corporate body of Clergy—Refusal to appoint Bishops considered—Character of the Clergy—Education—The Church and the Slaves—Alleged incongruity between Slavery and Baptism—West Indian arguments for refusing Baptism—Nonconformist Missions: Moravian, Methodist, Baptist.

It would be most misleading and unfair to examine the history of the Church in the West Indies as an isolated and self-determined episode. The general condition of the Church in England during the period 1600 to 1800 must be kept in view; and we could hardly think of a more judicious treatment than that of first reading the invaluable work of Mr. C. J. Abbey and Mr. J. H. Overton, *The English Church in the Eighteenth Century*, in so far as the period covered by that work goes. Most especially it must be kept in view that the early lines of these Colonies were laid down during the great strife of the 17th century and the period of compromise inaugurated by the Revolution of 1688. The supremacy of the State over the Church was secured by the arrest of organic life in the latter, disguised by the semblance of pre-eminence in the sphere of religion granted to it by the continuance of Establishment on Erastian lines; the shackling of its

Digitized by Google

freedom by Acts of Uniformity; and the complete suppression, after 1717, of its legislative and administrative functions. The channels into which the strength of religious men was turned was controversy with Deists and Sceptics, and ethical and political discussion. For such channels West Indian life provided no streams. The utmost that could be looked for from Churchmen there was a holding the ground until the revival of personal and practical piety associated with the "Evangelical" movement. How far this was done we have now to inquire.

From their original foundation the Colonies bore ample signs on the surface of the close union of Church and State prevailing in England at that time. "It has always," said Long, "been a rule in our West India islands to assimilate their religion, as well as laws, to those of the mother-country." It was taken for granted that ecclesiastical institutions crossed the water, and, together with political and industrial ties, assisted in maintaining—what was never for a moment questioned in those days—the integrity of the empire, which in the main implied, in spite of the many Scotchmen, identity with "the predominant partner."

The Jamaica Expedition was provided by Cromwell with seven Chaplains, whose instructions were drawn up by John Milton himself. Succeeding governors of the various Colonies received explicit instructions on this point: "an orthodox ministry was to be encouraged," and so on. Parishes were at once marked out, although in some the ecclesiastical side was unworked. But in general the Parish was at once a civil and an ecclesiastical area: vestries were constituted with the double range of duties; churches were built (in which the vestries then met); and order was taken for the maintenance of the clergy. In very early times church attendance was enforced in some Colonies; we even find Governor Bell of Barbados

Digitized by Google

going so far as to order family prayers and public catechizing of children.

But the need for encouraging settlers soon caused practical men to see that toleration was a necessity, and must be applied more freely than the strife of parties allowed at home. In Governor Modyford's instructions, 1664, repeated to Governors Lynch, 1671, and Vaughan, 1674, it was ordered, by a Secretary of State responsible (if any one inquired at all about it) to a Parliament which enforced the Tests and Corporation Acts at home, that "persons of different judgments and opinions in matters of religion" should be encouraged to transport themselves with their effects, and therefore they were not to be "obstructed or hindered under pretence of scruples in conscience." It was, therefore, deemed sufficient respect for the law at home to require that the Governor and his Council should take both the oaths, that of political allegiance and that of ecclesiastical supremacy; while the oath of allegiance alone was to be required for all the officers. At the same time, the Governor was enjoined to order his household after the manner of the Church of England. A little later, when opposition to the Romanists became more acute, the Oath of Supremacy was insisted upon in order to keep them out of offices in the Colonies. The Toleration Acts of William and Mary were adopted by the local legislatures, and Dissenting preachers might take out licences, but they were not permitted to instruct slaves or to open schools. The exclusion of Romanists from public office was shared by the Jews, who were, however, allowed to reside unmolested as traders, and were permitted to have a synagogue.

The only share of the slaves in religious institutions was the suspension of all field-work on Sundays, as had been the case with the serfs of the Middle Ages; and at the Festivals of Easter and Christmas certain

Digitized by Google

holidays were compulsory. For the slaves this came practically to mean that they had the Sunday for the cultivation of their own private grounds, and for holding their markets, as well as for such festivities as were not interfered with.

The Sacraments and Sacramental offices of the Church were provided for the White people and the freemen; and scales of fees were fixed by law. The clergy kept registers of Baptisms, Marriages, and Burials which had official validity. The Houses of Legislature had their Chaplains, and for years held their meetings in churches, where also elections took place until late in the last century. We also read of a Governor of Antigua holding a reception in St. John's Church (now the Cathedral) so late as 1799. The clergy were *ex officio* members of vestry, and in some Colonies were the Chairmen.

Blasphemy was to be discountenanced as a vice along with drunkenness.

The provision for the support of the clergy came partly from the Colonial Treasuries, partly from fees, and partly from Vestry allowances. Where they had glebes, although not actually freeholders, they were allowed the political franchise on that qualification as if they were. Their incomes varied greatly, but taken as a whole they were on a liberal scale. In 1748 the Jamaica Assembly showed a generous desire to secure the clergy some independence of purely local control by forbidding further vestry allowances and substituting increased grants from the Island Treasury. In fact, we record with pleasure that in the West Indian lay mind there was a remarkably considerate regard for the clergy: no West Indian historian when recording their failures, or worse, does so without lamenting them, and looking about for their causes. The legislatures were always liberal in their financial treatment; everything we have read supports Gardner in saying,

Digitized by Google

that "when any kind of pressure was put upon the clergy concessions (in other directions) were always made."

But the appearance on paper very much surpassed the reality. There were not a few parishes without clergy, and a good many without churches. In Portland parish in Jamaica in Long's time there was neither church nor resident rector: "the services were performed in some planter's house about once or twice in the year; and St. George's Parish was in a similar position. Barclay, a partisan of the Colonies, allows that in some country districts churches were closed on Sundays for weeks and months together. But perhaps the extreme case of neglect was that of Tobago, where, so late as 1812, there were seven parishes with only one clergyman, and no church whatever. Such as they were the churches were small, and within reach of but few people except in the towns; and they were, as a matter of fact, but thinly attended except at funerals or on special occasions.

Baptisms and Marriages were performed in houses, and where there was no incumbent Churchwardens or Justices of the Peace officiated, as they did also at Burials, most of which were in private ground. Nor was the general character of the inhabitants such as to lead us to expect much attention to the claims of religion: a glance at the composition of the settlers, as given in the last chapter, suffices to reduce any surprise that may be felt at the great indifference. We find that the first batch of settlers in Barbados were of such a temper that their Chaplain left them in despair. And the rector of Port Royal declares that there was not "a more ungodly people on the face of the earth" than his parishioners. Ligon's ship-companions were in large proportions "vile and abandoned characters," with a sprinkling to whom he is able to assign a high character. Sir Robert Schomburgk—the historian

Digitized by Google

of Barbados, and author of the famous Schomburgk line between Guiana and Venezuela—says: "If we consult the history of our colonies it will generally be found that the first settlers were of that class of society in which morals and virtue are seldom to be met with . . . it was not amelioration of their Christian virtues which led them to distant climes" (p. 92).

But perhaps the most significant opinion is that of a Jamaica rector, himself an ardent advocate of the Planters' cause and a bitter opponent of the Dissenting Missionaries in the troubled times immediately preceding Emancipation — the Rev. George Bridges, rector of St. Ann's, Jamaica. Speaking of the situation at the close of the 18th century and the opening years of the 19th, he says: "Empty churches, the unhallowed burial of the dead—*i. e.* dead negroes —in fields and gardens, the criminal delay of baptism —even after permission was given—the discouragement of marriage, and the profanation of the Sabbath, are models which the Slaves can hardly be expected to improve. Fraught with pernicious consequences to the whole community, it is in vain that the clergy from eight-and-forty pulpits fearlessly denounce the wrath of heaven, and the loss of men, while none attend to hear them; for it cannot be expected that the heathen, or the neophyte, will approach an altar which seems despised, or neglected, by the presumed superiority and higher attainments of his temporal master."

Of the same period Stewart, whom we take to have been a Presbyterian, writes: "As to the respect paid to religion, it will be sufficient to say that, with a few exceptions, the congregations in the churches consist usually of a few white ladies, and a respectable proportion of free people of colour and blacks."

Government of the Church.—It is not without

Digitized by Google

reason that another historian of Jamaica, Gardner, although himself a Congregationalist minister in that island, candidly ascribes a considerable degree of the blame for the failure of the Church to the lack of proper authority. During the whole of the period covered in this chapter the Church in the British West Indies was an anomaly. It was an Episcopal Church without Bishops; it was a professedly Diocesan system without dioceses. The Colonies were all regarded as being under the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the Bishop of London. The source of this authority is obscure. Bishop Gibson, in 1723, inquiring into it, was told that although there was no ecclesiastical title to such authority, there was an Order in Council (*i. e.* the Privy Council) of the reign of Charles II. by which the Colonies were made part of the See of London. For this order he made diligent search, when he discovered that none such existed. Accordingly he declined to appoint a Commissary or Representative. Afterwards he obtained a special Commission from the Crown, and under it addressed inquiries to the Clergy. This Commission expired with his death in 1748. His successor, Bishop Sherlock, told Dr. Johnson of Connecticut that he would appoint a Commissary for the American Colonies "as soon as I take a proper authority from the King." Bishop Wilberforce, in his *History of the American Church* (1846), says that the origin of this authority is "exceedingly uncertain," and considers that the most probable explanation is to be found in the hearty concurrence of the then Bishop of London in the earliest schemes of the Virginia Company. This may have led to his being requested to find chaplains for the expeditions and to license them, and from this beginning there may have grown up a notion that the Colonial Chaplains were in some way in his diocese.

Digitized by Google

Anderson, in his *History of the Colonial Church*, refers to Collier as recording that some Chaplains in Holland and Germany were placed under the Bishop of London (Laud) in 1634; and to Heylyn as recording an extension of this surveillance to all Chaplains of Companies in foreign parts, including the Plantations. But later he cites a general authority in ecclesiastical affairs in the Colonies given later on to a Commission composed of the two Archbishops, the Keeper of the Seal, the Lord Treasurer, and others, which brings obscurity again over the fact; for in 1681 a Report from the Committee of Council on Trade and Plantations mentions only the Bishop of London as licensing authority for clergy; and Bishop Gibson certainly was led to suppose that he, and he alone, had any jurisdiction of the kind. In 1801 the question was raised formally, and the Attorney-General of England reported unequivocally in favour of the jurisdiction, and steps were taken to make it more real. It should be recorded that Bishop Gibson, though unable to see his way to any disciplinary action, did all he could by way of advice; he wrote public letters exhorting the masters and mistresses of families in the Plantations, "to encourage and promote the instruction of their Negroes in the Christian faith," and to the clergy themselves to assist in their several parishes in the same duty. And great pains were taken to have these letters circulated throughout the West India Islands as well as in North America.

The jurisdiction of the Bishop of London was therefore a very limited one. It did not in any way affect the laity, and even over the clergy it could not be made penal; it began and ended with the issue of the licence. With regard to its limitation to the clergy the Colonists were very decided. Penal laws for ecclesiastical delinquencies were barred in Jamaica in

Digitized by Google

1681, and most vigorously repudiated in a curious preamble to the Laws of Barbados, 1719. This branch of jurisdiction stands on a different footing from the exercise of disciplinary authority over the clergy, and it is the absence of the latter which constitutes the standing grievances of Churchmen when thinking of the encroachments of the State during last century, a grievance which Long, for example, fully recognizes. With the issue of the licence, as has been said, all episcopal authority ended. Even when the Assembly of Jamaica ceased their protests against the nominal jurisdiction of the See of London in 1748, they would not allow it to extend to either presentation or induction, and would have objected to any rector being proceeded against in the Bishop's Court, if any one had been desirous of taking that course, and would have supported the rector in ignoring any sentence of suspension or deprivation.

In some cases the Bishop appointed a Commissary, especially in the American Colonies, but previous to 1800 we can find only four instances of such appointment in the West Indies—in Jamaica at Port Royal; a "Surrogate" in Barbados, and a Commissary there mentioned by Poyer, and a succession of Commissaries in Antigua. In 1800 five were appointed, but this was the commencement of the new era.

The *Ordinary* of each Colony was the Governor, as deputy for the King. He issued marriage licences and probate of Wills, and with regard to parishes he not only "presented" the clergy as patron, but also inducted them: "institution" by the ecclesiastical authority there was none. He also "deprived" not only from temporal, but also from spiritual exercise of function. This was on petition of parishioners; but it did not suit them to be scrupulous, as we have seen, and Long can give particulars of only a single case of such discipline. Bryan Edwards says that in estimating

Digitized by Google

the income of the Governor of Jamaica "it is supposed also that money has sometimes been made by the sale of Church livings"; shocking as this is, it is to be remembered that it is only the extreme case of mercenary abuse; a similar source of revenue was the conferring of commissions in the Colonial Militia. If the military defences of the country were entrusted to people who received their appointments largely by purchase, it was not a very far cry to simoniacal induction into the offices of the Church.

Of the corporate character by the "clergy" there was no sign: they were a number of individuals. The first trace of treatment as a body we find in 1798, when the clergy of Jamaica were subjected to a deduction of 10 per cent. from their Treasury stipends in order to form a Clergy Widow and Orphan Fund.

Before passing onward it should be remembered at once that some flavour of Establishment was also granted to the Presbyterian Church of Scotland, "the sister Establishment," Bridges calls it. The Presbyterians received grants, and it was ordered that the minister should show a licence from the Presbytery of Edinburgh.

The prolonged refusal by the British Government to permit the appointment of Bishops in our Colonies requires more careful judgment than the subject has always received. Throughout the 18th century we have, on the one hand, continuous appeal for Episcopacy, from clergy in the Colonies and from their friends at home; on the other hand, a determinedly deaf ear on the part of the civil authorities at home. Noble and devoted clergy like Talbot and Johnson appealed from across the Atlantic; at home such Churchmen as the leading men of the Propagation Society never rested, while successive Bishops of London were insistent on being relieved of the

Digitized by Google

appearance of an authority they knew to be a shadow.[1] But when we find a man so universally respected as Bishop Berkeley visited with such sore disappointment in the matter of his Missionary College in Bermuda (for North America), and remember the grant from Government which he could not induce them to pay, and which he finally abandoned all hope of seeing, we feel that there was something deeper down than mere lethargy, such as that with respect to intellectual progress, for example, which caused a similar failure of Sir Hans Sloane's endeavour to have a Government Professor of Botany appointed for Jamaica. Something of a political character underlay the objection, and not without reason. We find, for example, even in the 19th century, Ernest Hawkins, the esteemed Secretary of the Propagation Society, acknowledging that some political result might have been expected from the appointment of Bishops. In his preface to the history of the Colonial Bishoprics Fund (p. 5), this is clear, and the opinion leaks out that he and others consider it not impossible that the secession of the Thirteen Colonies might have been prevented. This is extremely doubtful. Remembering that in 1712 there was a Bill with a proposal to endow the Church in America with a share in the customs' duty, no strength of imagination is required to conceive how the flames of 1761 would have been increased had such a provision been part of the grievance between the Colonies and home. In any case, the secession of the Colonies is a political question, and one not specially concerning the Church. The dangerous association of the Church with party is recognized

[1] The four Sees which it was desired to constitute were Barbados, Jamaica, Burlington in New Jersey, and Williamsburg in Virginia. The presidentship of the new Codrington College was to go with the See of Barbados, and it was thought other Bishops might have incomes from home, as from the Mastership of the Savoy Chapel, or St. Catherine's Hospital.

Digitized by Google

also in a work of the present Secretary of the Propagation Society, Prebendary Tucker: "Churchmanship and loyalty to the Crown had hitherto been synonymous" (*English Church in other Lands*, p. 22): a fact that has proved of sad consequence in the history of our branch of the Church in the United States, if it may be taken as any explanation of its being even now only fifth in number of adherents. This is well expressed in the judgment of as unflinching a Churchman as ever wrote a line, Dean Burgon: "The difficulties which attended the just demand of the American Church for a native Episcopate grew out of the political troubles of those times. Because episcopacy was identified with the system of monarchical government, its introduction was resisted by a large party among the Americans themselves, who dreaded (clergy and laity alike) lest it should prove an instrument for riveting the yoke of a foreign dominion" (*Lives of Twelve Good Men*, vol. i. p. 30). The main ground of persistence in inaction was unquestionably the confusion in men's ideas between the spheres of Church and State. The compulsory jurisdiction of the Church had to be relinquished before any corresponding freedom for her own organization could be feasible. With regard to the Colonies it was the strong Colonies of North America which our statesmen had in mind, and the powerful elements of Nonconformity, Quakerism, and Lutheranism which they contained, rendering out of the question any attempt to impose upon them the compulsory ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the Church of England. To their minds the "Bishop" suggested rather the State official than the Religious Chief Pastor; the Prelate rather than the Spiritual director. Had the Church been a voluntary body the objection could not have been raised, but its interlocking with the State was close, and in that particular period it was

Digitized by Google

the Church that was in subordination, and Crown and Parliament as directors of the Church obscured her pastoral character. The intolerant policy of the Church of France which disallowed the liberties of the Huguenots naturally extended to the French Colonies, and we find Huguenots unable to settle in their own Colony of Louisiana for that reason.[1] The English Dissenters and the German Lutherans were bound to oppose the Establishment of a Church which they conceived, however erroneously, to involve a resumption of the 17th-century difficulties; and even the Church Colony of Virginia took the same view. No sounder judgment has been expressed than that of the sagacious historian of the English Church in the Colonies, Anderson, where he severely animadverts on Laud's proposals to send out a Bishop to New England, because of Laud's express inclusion of penal jurisdiction; and later on, when he condemns the insertion of an apparatus of fines and imprisonments in Governor Bell's ecclesiastical legislation for Barbados; but when he comes to the demand for Bishops in their Spiritual capacity he is warm in his advocacy and severe in his condemnation of the refusals of the home authorities to listen to the appeals. In vain did Bishop Butler in 1750 formulate most clearly the sphere of Episcopal jurisdiction: the Dissenters got the ear of the Ministry, and it was necessary to wait. For, after all, some event was necessary for the opening of the eyes of men to the possibility of separating spiritual from temporal jurisdiction. This event came in the separation of the Thirteen Colonies from Great Britain. The Churchmen

[1] The argument was used in England that Colonial Episcopacy would tend to make the Colonies independent. Berkeley answered that that had not been its effect in French and Spanish Colonies. No: but these nations did not suffer Dissenters either at home or abroad.

Digitized by Google

of America then were manifestly beyond reach of any penal ecclesiastical laws of England. The objection ceased, and within three years their first Bishop was consecrated (Bishop Seabury). Three years after that the Churchmen of a colony, Nova Scotia, saw that they could have a Bishop without involving claims over other than Church people, the Government acquiesced and assisted, and Bishop Inglis was consecrated. The principle was now settled, but the West Indies had to wait forty years longer before they were placed in a similar position, and great was the loss of time and opportunity thereby caused. It is a learned and open-minded living Churchman, Dean Kitchin, who says that "as the vigour of the Church increases, it is seen that nothing is so valuable as an active Bishop" (*Life of Bishop Harold Browne*). And it is a well-informed Wesleyan Missionary with long experience in the West Indies who wrote: "For many years little was done for the religious instruction of the inhabitants by the Episcopal Church of England; but more recently, since the appointment of Bishops to the West Indies, the number of clergymen has been increased, and new ecclesiastical life and vigour have been displayed" (Rev. W. Moister, *The West Indies, Enslaved and Free*).

CHARACTER OF THE CLERGY.

Surely never did the *Church* of Christ suffer more severely from the heresy of identifying it with the *clergy* than in the West Indies. Never did the laity more completely shift the burden of Christian duty wholly upon their pastors; and never were those pastors less able to bear it. The "clergy" itself was but a fragment, only one "order" was represented: no Bishops and no Deacons. And as to offices, there

Digitized by Google

were none but incumbencies; no supervising Archdeacons or Rural Deans; no Cathedral Chapters, no Colleges of clergy. The laity undertook no duty except that of Churchwarden, an office in which the secular duties far exceeded the care of the church-fabric, and some financial matters which gave them an appearance of being ecclesiastical. There were no lay-readers, or catechists; no Sunday-school teachers; no district visitors. Long heads his chapter on the Church, "State of the clergy." He is right; the clergy, and the clergy alone, were the "church" in the eyes of West Indians. And the clergy were in no sense a "body"; each held office by appointment of the Governor and at his pleasure; and knew well that he was not likely to be disturbed except in case of sheer refusal to perform his formal duties, or of gross and scandalous conduct which somehow forced itself upon official notice and could not be overlooked. Long could remember only one example of this, in spite of what we shall see was his own opinion of the quality of the clergy of Jamaica. They met in no synod, nor in regular conferences; nor indeed do we find any traces even of friendly and informal conferences upon their work. They had no journals, magazines, or reviews. We have, therefore, when estimating the work of the Church in the West Indies, to remember that we are thinking only of some fifty[1] clergy situated much as our Continental Chaplains and the Chaplains to the East India Company were for many years. The common bond was the licence which necessitated the use in the regular offices of the

[1] In 1800 Jamaica 20
,, 1812 Barbados 14
,, Antigua 6
,, St. Kitts 5
,, Nevis 3
48

Digitized by Google

Church of a uniform Liturgy, and adhesion to the Creeds and Articles; and there was also the tradition of the Church behind them, into the spirit of which no doubt the best of them entered. Even Bridges, the clerical Annalist of Jamaica, when he treats of the clergy, has nothing to relate of spiritual labours, and fills out his space with accounts of their status and emoluments.

The clergy were married, and passed as educated men, by their position taking rank in the upper class of society. Canon Perry says that the clergy at home, during part of this period at least, were on a par with the tradesmen. It is doubtless true that their ranks were not largely recruited from the upper classes, and that their social position was rather conventional and at discretion of their squires. In the West Indies, for example, an examination of twelve copious pedigree tables of Antiguan families shows only seventeen cases of members of those families in holy orders, or daughters marrying clergy. Still, the clergy were associated with the upper class in a way that was important, because it determined their ambitions and their social sympathies.

Few of the clergy were Creole, born in the Colonies; there were a few unsuccessful planters, merchants, and ex-military officers who sought holy orders in England, and came back to enjoy the emoluments of island rectories. Dr. Walcot (Peter Pindar) was a medical man who returned with a licence from the Bishop of London, but how he secured it was never clear to his contemporaries.

But in the main each clergyman was a fresh comer; without colonial traditions or family ties, and almost certainly one who failed to see a clear course to promotion at home. Of the inferior quality of those who came out the evidence is crushing. Mrs. Lanagan says it was commonly understood that the Bishop of

Digitized by Google

London ordained men for the Colonies on lower qualifications than would have been accepted for home work. The first Bishop of Jamaica said candidly that he expected no good "until the old clergy were exterminated." "The cassock was put on with little discrimination," says Long, and he adds in his caustic way, "Some labourers of the Lord's vineyard have at times been sent who were much better qualified to be retailers of salt-fish, or boatswains to privateers, than ministers of the Gospel;" and again, he declares that in some parishes no rectory-house was built, as "the flock would rather the rector should live anywhere than among them." And he generalizes upon the grievance by commenting on the people at home who would make no scruple in sending over their footman, to benefit by any employment in the Colonies, ecclesiastical or civil. Perhaps the passage in which he passes his formal sentence should be given as it stands: he was a contemporary, a man of wide range of interest, writes in forcible English, and is one of those writers for whom the reader who passes days over his pages learns to feel a very considerable personal regard.

In volume ii., chapter 10, he sums up: "Of the character of the clergy of this island (Jamaica) I shall say but little. There have seldom been wanting some, who were equally respectable for their learning, piety, and exemplary good behaviour; others have been detestable for their addiction to lewdness, drinking, gambling, and iniquity; having no control but their own sense of the dignity of their function, and the censures of the Governor. The scandalous or irreproachable demeanour of many will chiefly depend on their own quality of heart, or that of the commander-in-chief. If the cloth has suffered disgrace and contempt from the actions of a few, we must nevertheless consider the major part worthy the public esteem and

Digitized by Google

encouragement . . . Let us, however, venture to assert," he says, two pages later on, "that although some may perhaps be found, who in their own conduct would disgrace even the meanest of mankind, there are others, and in a much greater number, who, by their example and their doctrine, would be an honour to their profession in any part of England."

We may note as among distinguished exceptions before the year 1800, the reference to the activity and zeal of the first rector of Port Royal; to three clergy of Jamaica in 1722 "of unblemished lives," Galpin, Johnstone, and May (Gardner, p. 195); to Knox, and especially F. Bryan, successive rectors of St. John's, Antigua (Anderson, iii. p. 540); to Bryan Edwards' tutor (B. E., i. p. 308); to the pious rector (Dent) whom the Wesleyan, Dr. Coke, casually entering St. George's Church, Grenada, found "preaching with pathos and energy"; the presence of such as these indicates how different might have been the history had there been Bishops, and had the education of Colonial clergy been such as was designed by Codrington, Berkeley, and Bishop Wilson.

The clergy were numerically totally inadequate to any effective pastoral duty; it was very seldom that all the parishes were occupied, *e. g.* only five out of eleven in Barbados in 1680; and even if all were filled, what could twenty clergy (1800) do in Jamaica, equal in area to Devonshire and Cornwall combined, with 400,000 people? Some of the churches seated only 150 people; few were situated so as to be accessible, in a tropical country, to more than a fraction of their parishioners. The clergy had other engagements; some public, as membership of the vestries; others they undertook privately, especially keeping private schools.

Education.—The teaching of children was in the main a function of the Church throughout Christendom,

Digitized by Google

or of Church and State in union. In the West Indies we should hardly expect the fifty clergy whose condition we have just depicted to be either enlightened theorists or first-rate organizers of education. There is in fact painfully little to record so far as regards the upper and middle classes; while for the masses we are in face of an absolute blank. We may well bear in mind that this was a barren period for Education in England itself; never were the Universities at so low an ebb; the Grammar Schools never so formal and ill-adapted to the needs of the middle classes; and no one of the famous public schools was founded within this period; while what we now know as Elementary Schools were still in the womb of the future.

In the West Indies there was no provision for University education at all. In the North American Colonies, Harvard, Yale, William and Mary, and Columbia Colleges were founded; but in the West Indies the bequest of Codrington stands out alone, and this was abortive for college education until after 1800. However, the Plantation atmosphere seems to have had something to do with it, for none of the successful American colleges were in the region of tobacco or cotton; William and Mary College in Virginia declined into a poor Grammar School. As for Grammar Schools, there was the partial employment of the Codrington bequest in the maintenance of a Grammar School, with varying effect; a Free School was founded in the same Colony by Harrison, a merchant (1733), and another by Sir John Alleyn, Speaker of Assembly (1785). There were a few Schools endowed by private benefactors in Jamaica, but in 1764 three out of the seven were in abeyance, and others are described as being "of very trivial importance." Long advocates the establishment by the Legislature of Middle Class Schools, not for the upper class, not

Digitized by Google

aiming at professional education; and a boarding-school for girls; and gives himself great pains in elaborating a detailed scheme for such schools. The curious fact is that there was more supply of benefactors to endow schools than there was of administrative ability, or else of will, to carry them on. In 1798 a bequest of 1721 was found to be lying quite dormant; the money was recovered, and a Free boarding-school on Church of England lines was set up. But another endowment, in the parish of St. Andrew, estimated at £14,000, was irrecoverably lost.

In the Journal of Assembly of Jamaica there is a list of 218 legacies between 1667 and 1736, and yet only three schools were in existence.

Most boys of the upper class were sent home for their education. The few who remained were placed under private charge of the clergy. Fewer girls were sent, because of the expense; those remaining had to be content with brief periods of governesses, with itinerating masters for music and dancing.

The solitary case of a school for Negroes was that on the Codrington Trust Estates, or rather there were two, one on each Estate; they are the only Schools scheduled in a Government Report of 1812 in the whole region of Barbados, Antigua, Windward Islands and Trinidad; but there was a school in Antigua belonging to the Christian Faith Society, which somehow escaped mention.

We cannot refrain from again placing Long on record; of the boys and girls who went to England, he says, "they went like a bale of goods consigned to some factor, who placed them in some school of his own choice; and they came too often from the feet of Gamaliel a disgrace to their friends and a nuisance to their country." For want of parental and tutorial guidance not a single young Jamaican of

Digitized by Google

whom he could hear thus sent out and supported until he was called to the Bar was of a character such as to lead him to gain £5 a year by his practice; character, he says expressly, not abilities.

Unhappy countries! Unfortunate alike were the children whether they stayed at home compulsory spectators of a degraded moral and social system, or were despatched to England, the victims of mercenary tutors and schoolmasters and schoolmistresses. And in all this the disorganization of the Church rendered her powerless to intervene.

THE CHURCH AND THE SLAVES.

We are not to suppose that there was from the outset a defined purpose of keeping the Negroes in permanent savagery. In the French and Spanish Colonies there was a very distinct and formal regard paid to their being made Christian. The French *Code Noir* of 1685 included specific provision for their Christian status. And in the very early days of our own settlements attention was constantly given to the beneficent opportunities of colonization as a method of bringing heathen people to Christ. In the American Colonies some little evangelical work among the Red Indians was encouraged; but in the West Indies where the aboriginal Caribs had either disappeared, as in Jamaica and Barbados, or were soon disposed of, as in Antigua, it was the African slaves alone who constituted the heathen people, and with regard to them the narrowing influence of industrial exigency soon mastered the colonial mind. For a century and a half the doors of the Established churches were closed against the hundreds of thousands of heathens by whose physical labour the industrial structure was upheld. Here again the

Digitized by Google

Codrington bequest secured an isolated exception. The Propagation Society, as Trustees, maintained a Chaplain to the Estates, and provided a chapel, as they did schools.

It was not only public worship but the beneficent institutions of the Church which were withheld from the slaves, especially Baptism and preparation therefor; Marriage; and preparation for Death and Burial in the hope of the Christian creed. "The slave has no hearth and no religion," with cold cruelty says Seneca the Elder. In the West Indies the old Roman exclusion of slaves from Patriotic worship was revived.

In all this there was a gap between Law and its administration. The Law was explicit enough. The Slave Code of Jamaica (1696) contains the following injunctions—"All masters, mistresses, owners, and employers are to endeavour as much as possible the instruction of their slaves in the principles of the Christian religion; and to facilitate their conversion, and do their utmost to fit them for baptism: and as soon as convenient cause all such to be baptized as they can make sensible of a Deity and the Christian faith." It seems incredible that in face of this public injunction being on the statute book and unrepealed, the Agent of the Colony in England at the close of the 18th century, when asked, "What religious instruction have the Negro slaves?" replied to Parliament, with graphic curtness, "We know of none such in Jamaica!"

It must not, however, be supposed that the West Indian mind was incapable of constructing a case before the bar of European judgment for the definite and continuous exclusion of the Slaves from Christian influences. Either by his own inventiveness, set to work by his imagined industrial needs, or by absorption of ideas from the West Indian community

Digitized by Google

in England, he achieved a copious facility for arguing out his case in many a verandah conversation, with his sugar-works and cane-fields before his eyes.

It was seen very early that there was some incongruity between Christianity and the status of slavery, and that the whole trend of reform in England, both in the Church and in the laws of the State, was being crossed. Ligon in his invaluable contemporary account of the early days of Barbados had a Negro attendant allotted to him for a time, who asked him to make him a Christian.

"I promised," says Ligon, "to do my best endeavour, and when I came home, spoke to the Master of the Plantation, and told him that poor Sambo desired much to be made a Christian. But his answer was, 'That the people of that Iland were governed by the Laues of England, and by those Lawes we could not make a Christian a slave.' I told him that my request was far different from that, for I desired him to make a slave a Christian. His answer was, 'That it was true, there was a great difference in that: But, being once a Christian, he could no more account him a slave, and so lose the hold they had of them as slaves, by making them Christians; and by that means should open such a gap, as all the Planters in the Iland would curse him.' So I was struck mute, and poor Sambo kept quite out of Church; as ingenious, as honest, and as good a natur'd soul as ever wore black, or eat green." From this it is evident that at that time the Planters were innocent of knowledge of the old villenage laws, and simply had in mind the actual attitude of English law at that date, with all its gains from Christian influence in favour of civil liberty. But this simplicity was not of long continuance. In Virginia a law was passed in 1667 explicitly enunciating that Baptism did *not* enfranchise. And seventy years after Bishop Berkeley, in his Anniversary

Digitized by Google

Sermon before the Propagation Society, showed that good men were prepared to disarm opposition to Missionary effort by withdrawing any claim that Christianity and Slavery were incompatible.

The good Bishop in speaking of the Negro Slaves in the North American Colonies and the causes of the obstacles put by their owners to Missionary effort in their behalf says, "There is an erroneous notion that the being baptized is inconsistent with slavery. To undeceive them (the owners) in this particular, which had too much weight, it seemed a proper step, if the opinion of His Majesty's Attorney and Solicitor-General could be procured. This opinion they charitably sent over, signed with their own hands, which was accordingly printed in Rhode Island, and dispersed throughout the plantations. I heartily wish it may produce the intended effect." Coming from a man so eminent for nobility of character, and so devoted to the noble aim of elevating the Negroes and Indians, this passage is decisive as to the completeness with which the status of slavery was accepted or acquiesced in by Christian leaders of that time. It was, however, felt by the Planters that Christianity did really enjoin a greater approach to equality of status among Christians than was consistent with slavery: for example, in an Act of Barbados of 1676, the religious instruction of slaves is disallowed expressly on the ground of "leading to notions of equality." But we must characterize as tergiversation their disallowance of slave evidence in Courts on the ground that the slaves were not Christians, when they themselves would not allow them instruction. They might at least have adopted the method of Colonies in which the Roman Church was established and where both Baptism and Religious instruction were legal, and in consequence slaves could be witnesses on a lower footing; their depositions were not full evidence, but

Digitized by Google

were considered as "bare narratives." But another ground was taken up by those who felt the inconsistency; they laid the burden of reproach upon the Negroes themselves and declared that they could not and would not become Christians. They discovered "an invincible inappetency" to it on the part of the slaves themselves; and they then drew to their side and declared themselves of opinion that as matter of fact their own tribal religions suited them well enough.

Then they had recourse to the convenient doubt as to identity of race; and asserted that the Negro, though human in outward "resemblance," had not the full qualities of humanity; a notion which was forcibly characterized by Godwyn, an early Minister in Virginia, and afterwards in Barbados, as "an idea of which atheism and irreligion were the parents, and sloth and avarice the foster-nurses." In support of it, the Colonists took very kindly to the suggestion of Ethnologists of the day, that the Negro was not of the same "species" as the European; they welcomed this convenient distinction between "genus" and "species." They resorted to the gradation theory of created beings, and the allotment of the Negro race to a lower grade; to the notion of variations from Mammalian Type, the Negro being alleged to be nearer to the Ape-variation than the White races were. This they thought to be established by comparative anatomy; and further certified by review of the gradations of Intellectual Endowment.

The counter-belief was expressed before the Propagation Society in resonant tones by Bishop Butler—"Despicable as they may appear in our eyes, they are the creatures of God, and of the race of mankind for whom Christ died."

Then there was further resort to the Old Testament Scriptures; a procedure in which our West Indian

Digitized by Google

Colonists trod the same path as the Puritan settlers of New England, where, as Berkeley says, "Our first planters (therein, as in certain other particulars, affecting to imitate Jews rather than Christians) imagined they had a right to tread on the foot of Canaanites or Amalekites;" and as some of their ministers argued—"The heathen are driven out and we have their lands in possession; they were numerous, and we are few; therefore hath the Lord done this great work, to give His beloved rest." What the Puritans thought of their rights towards the Red Indians, the West Indian Planters thought of theirs towards the African Negroes, and such was and we believe still is the attitude of the Dutch farmers of South Africa towards the natives of the Cape and the Transvaal.

But the climax of consolatory justification was reached, in the West Indies at least, in a plea put forward by Long—evidently as a spokesman for the Planters of his day—that the ruling classes of those Colonies were really proceeding on profoundly Christian principles. They stood forward as the genuine defenders of individual liberty and of the purity of Protestant ritual and doctrine. They were averse, they said, to even the appearance of tyranny in religion; they did not think that Christianity could be honoured by "adding involuntary proselytes"; they held compulsory conversion to be "a shameful hypocrisy and insult to the true worship." And, on the second head, they could not condescend to methods of the Romanists—and especially the Portuguese—who incorporated many heathen rites and customs, and so composed "a medley of Paganism and Christianity."

Now we have, as already expressed, a great regard for Mr. Long, and we are therefore all the more pained that he should have allowed himself to be spokesman for such barefaced hypocrisies as these.

Digitized by Google

In the mouths of men who seldom or never attended public worship, whose lives threw much reproof on morality, and demonstrated with saddening force to the student of history how terribly true it is that the gains of religion and civilization may soon be swamped when the circumstances of life change, it was base and contemptible to talk of fear of insulting worship by giving facilities for the instruction of degraded savages. In the utmost exercise of a liberal charity we yet are bound to despise a jealousy for personal liberty on the part of slave-owners, and a zeal on their part for purity of doctrine and ritual in a religion which they had abandoned in all but the shadow of a name.

Yet even so we feel bound to try to look at the matter from the verandah of a Jamaica "great house." There are worse hypocrisies than the enunciation of high-sounding pretensions to lofty motives in order to gloze over procedure impregnated with the common-place appetite for self-interest. And we are less pained as we listen to the average Jamaica planter as he uttered such sophistical pleas for inactivity as those above recited than when we read of the intolerable hypocrisy which too often underlay the apparently religious expressions of some of them. Can words describe the horrible depravity of mind which is implied in the lamentations of Sir Thomas Modyford, of Barbados and Jamaica, over the insufficient provision of clergy when he was himself held by contemporary opinion to be "the openest atheist and most professed evil-liver in the world"? Better far for the Church, for the community, for the slaves themselves, open profession of even the shallowest reasons for refusing religious instruction to the masses, than the participation in supplying such instruction where its value is disapproved by intellectual conviction or its authority renounced by abandonment of all the ideals it would enforce.

Digitized by Google

On the whole situation, Long himself was too honest not to feel that the Planters' case would not hold water. He is himself in favour of admitting to Christian privileges such Negroes as show promise of being benefited; he advocates the reduction of the fee for Baptism; which was *23s. 9d.* He is also discontented himself with the bare ritual of 18th-century worship and looks with favour upon reform, whether in the direction of Roman methods or of the enthusiastic rant and gesticulation of the new Dissenting sects, as containing, both of them, elements of appeal to the Negro nature which should not be despised or set aside. His accuracy is at fault in including the Quakers as using ranting methods; and he does not include among the Romanist methods which he can approve, "the indulgences, injunctions, mummery, and legerdemain," which he seems to think part of that system. But on the whole, his attitude is clear: he is dissatisfied with the bare worship of that time as inadequate for the legitimate needs of a tropical race.

Colonial opinion and practice being such as is above described, and such being the atmosphere in which a scanty and scattered and unguided clergy lived, we are not able to seek to minimize the failure of the Church in the Slavery period. West Indians themselves, looking back upon the past, do not scruple to speak of "Slavery with its inhuman and anti-Christian spirit," as "neutralizing all efforts for good."

We cannot deny that for one hundred and fifty years the vast majority of our fellow-subjects in the West Indies lived in unrelieved heathenism amid the so-called "parishes" of Jamaica, Barbados, and the Leeward Islands.

Digitized by Google

THE NONCONFORMIST MISSIONS.

Such being the maimed condition of the Church, and such being the opinions and practice of the formal adherents of the Establishment, no Churchman, however devoted to his Church, can help feeling anxious to learn that Christianity had some other agencies at work in these islands during the slavery times. If so staunch a Churchman as Bishop Selwyn of New Zealand resolved that whatever the responsibility which his office conferred upon him he would welcome the efforts of the London Missionary Society in Polynesia, of the Wesleyans in Fiji, and of the Scotch Presbyterians in certain islands of the Pacific, to the extent of never preaching in any place already occupied by those Missionaries; if great Bishops like Daniel Wilson and Cotton felt no jealousy of other Christians in the overwhelming task of evangelization in India, we may well put aside every feeling of scruple as we turn to ask what was done for the West Indian slaves in the days when the Church lay shackled and impotent there.

Premising that the Church of Rome had no part in the English islands, occupied as she was in attending to those within dominions where she was still the Established Church herself, we find that among Evangelical Christians it was to the zeal of some newly-formed bodies that the first stages of religious instruction were due. The older Dissenters did nothing. The Established Presbyterians of Scotland were in no different case from ourselves; and the other Dissenters who were amongst the settlers "enjoyed their opinions in private, without forming congregations, or putting themselves to the expense of maintaining preachers or pastors." For these, as for Churchmen, fresh

Digitized by Google

impulse from Great Britain was needed. During the first century of Slavery nothing was done.

The new efforts began about the middle of the 18th century. There were three bodies who took the case of the Negroes to heart, and made endeavours on their behalf: the *Unitas Fratrum*, or United Brethren, commonly known as the Moravian Brethren, from Germany; the Methodists from England; and the Baptists from America.

The Moravians.—It was on a West India island, though not a British one, that the Moravians made a commencement of their memorable Missionary enterprise—the island of St. Thomas in possession of Denmark; this was in 1732. They first appeared in our territory in 1754, and it is worthy of note that for once some absentee proprietors have the honour of initiating a beneficent enterprise on behalf of the slaves. Some proprietors of estates in the parish of St. Elizabeth in Jamaica, the Fosters and Barhams, sent out Moravian missionaries, and directed their Managers to allow the plantation slaves facilities for being instructed by them. But so strange and unique a situation proved wholly distasteful to these Managers, and the proprietors had to replace them by a Moravian as Attorney. He was there for seventeen years, but no one similar succeeded him. At the outset there was some success, but it was not great, and during fifty years not more than a thousand persons were baptized. Still, the Moravians were settled on the island, with five stations, preaching and visiting the sick on such estates as would allow it. They supported themselves, in part, by the labour of some slaves they saw fit to own; and they made at least one excellent use of this procedure, as they demonstrated that cruelty, and even harshness, were no necessary part of the slavery system. The Moravians, as is well known, did not believe in scattering Missionaries in solitude over a

Digitized by Google

country: in Jamaica they concentrated themselves in four parishes. In Barbados they began in 1765, but there they were able to make no impression for a long time: by 1795 they had only forty Negroes on their Communicants' roll. Very different was their progress in Antigua: there they impressed the Planters so favourably by their success with the Negroes that a favourable reception to a Church Society's Missionary later on was ensured; and that the Church Society itself (the "Christian Faith Society") in its instruction to its first Missionary encouraged him by pointing to the success of the Moravians in that island. In 1812 there were 8994 members of the Moravian community in Antigua, with four Missionaries.

The Methodists.—The beginning of their missions in the West Indies is one of the most characteristic episodes in that profoundly interesting movement. The Speaker of Assembly of Antigua, Mr. Gilbert, while staying in England, was brought into personal contact with John Wesley himself, and became a "Member of Society." On his return home he began to preach to his own slaves, reading Wesley's Sermons to them, and teaching them the new Methodist hymns. After his death his work was carried forward by an emigrant Methodist shipwright, John Baxter, who became the "leader" of the Society on the island. Then came, 1789, the visit to Antigua of the indomitable Dr. Coke, General-Superintendent of Wesley's Missionary Work. He did not come on purpose, but was driven there by storm when on his way to visit the societies in America. But his visit had great effect, and thoroughly settled the work. By 1793 the Methodists had 6570 members in Antigua, of whom the great mass were slaves (105 "coloured," and only 36 whites). In Jamaica their operations were carried on amidst ever-recurring opposition: when they converted a house into a chapel there arose a violent newspaper controversy

Digitized by Google

culminating in a riot. Afterwards preaching after dark was forbidden; that is to say, at the only time when slaves could attend, except on Sundays, for in the tropics it is always dark by seven o'clock. On Sundays there was the great obstacle that it was the day on which the slaves had to work on their provision grounds, as they had no other time regularly at their disposal: hence the insistence on some other opportunity for their own work, that we shall find later on. Dr. Coke visited the island three times, and some small societies were formed, but from the causes above-mentioned they were chiefly composed of coloured people and free Negroes: the total at the close of the century was about 600. In Barbados their progress was slight; they built a large chapel, but riots ensued, the jury of Planters and officials refused to convict the instigators, and the magistrates closed the chapel (1801). Three years after this a return of their membership shows only forty-nine; and in 1812 it was only eleven whites, thirteen free people, and six slaves.

The Baptists.—The Baptists began their West Indian work from America, not from England. When the United States were formed a party of Loyalists left for Jamaica. Among them was a coloured Baptist deacon—the Loyalists were not entirely Church-people, evidently—from Virginia, named George Lisle. He at once began to preach in Kingston, with a licence, and erected a chapel. Bryan Edwards, the historian, was amongst those who assisted him with subscriptions.[1] He was several times imprisoned, on flimsy pretences of having infringed the terms of his licence: but for a long period he laboured on, faithfully and judiciously. Another immigrant was Moses Baker, who was care-

[1] The Chapel is now replaced by a larger one on the same site: which has been occupied by a congregation under a Negro pastorate continuously for over a century.

Digitized by Google

less about religion when he arrived, but was drawn to the Baptist congregation, and became a pastor. He was less judicious in the difficult circumstances than Lisle, and made some mistakes; but he acquired a great influence over the smaller congregations. These men and some others who became pastors were left to work without any support or guidance from either America or England up to some years after 1800.

What was the character of the reception given to these Nonconformist Missions? The attitude of the Whites was generally that of decided opposition. The honourable exceptions were rare. Speaker Gilbert of Antigua has been mentioned; and we find that in that island Dr. Coke was at first welcomed with some warmth and accorded a public dinner; indeed he was offered £500 a year if he would settle there. But this was no proof that the White people wanted him for themselves; four years afterwards Mr. Gilbert was still the only white member of his own Society of 600 members. In Jamaica Dr. Coke was granted the use of the Court-House of Port Royal to preach in; in fact, "civilities abounded," he says; but nothing further came of them. Records occur, however, of some pious Planters and merchants, but very sparsely. Indeed, after the first acquiescent permission to begin, opposition began to increase rather than to diminish. As the time came when the Slave Trade, and even the Slave system itself, became subjects of hot political discussion in England, the Dissenting Missionaries could hardly fail to be regarded with suspicion as friends of the slaves, and as supported by the political Liberals at home. And the suspicion soon hardened into definite animosity. The Planters feared the influence of such leaders of the Negroes, and the Missionaries became identified in their minds with agitators against the social system of the Colonies. The plan was to avoid open breaches of the laws of

Digitized by Google

toleration; to grant licences, but to do so under such conditions as rendered them almost useless; such as forbidding any preaching wherever owners and attorneys did not themselves invite it, preaching after sunset, baptizing without notice and permission, and so on. In St. Vincent fines, imprisonment, even corporal punishment, banishment and on return "death," were enacted as penalties in connection with the preachers (1790). One Wesleyan Missionary, Matthew Lumb, declining to waste a year in inactivity waiting to qualify, by residence, for a licence, began to preach: he was imprisoned and then expelled from the Colony under these acts. But they were going too far, and on arrival in England the royal assent to them was refused and they fell to the ground. In Jamaica Lisle was at one time in prison, in chains; Baker was silenced; the first Missionary in Barbados could not preach, for years,—all that he was suffered to do was to keep a day-school.

The actual results effected by the Nonconformist Missions under these circumstances were small; but their presence in the islands was a standing declaration that there was an evangelical character in the Christian religion. By the upper class it was successfully ignored; but among the slaves, even the most ignorant, there was a consciousness of a brightness and a hope unknown before. That the roots struck in somewhat deeply became evident as time went on, and the opening was formed for a larger incursion of evangelistic agencies.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV

EMANCIPATION COMING INTO VIEW—REVIVAL OF THE CHURCH, 1800—1833

Political change in Britain—Increase of Evangelical influence—Resistance in W. Indies—Annals of Progress, 1797—1833; Mitigation of Hardships of Slavery—Discipline and Encouragement of Clergy—Legal protection of Nonconformist Missionaries—Registration of Slaves—Amelioration policy of Canning—Two Bishoprics formed, supported by Imperial Grants—Arrival of Bishops Coleridge and Lipscombe—Codrington College re-constituted—Riots in Jamaica—Deputation to England—Emancipation—Religious character of reception by the slaves—Note on some recent additions to our territory, Trinidad, Guiana, etc.

WITH the approach of the 19th century the darkness over the religious and moral condition of our West India Colonies began to lift; the fresh air of a new and brighter day breathed, faintly at first, and with much of what Carlyle would have called of the fuliginous in it, yet with ever-increasing exhilaration, over the night of European irreligion and Negro heathenism. It was, of course, no separate and isolated revolution, but a participation in the general uprising from a period of reaction and torpor. The era of the ascendency of the Middle class of society was commencing in England, tempered very largely with horror of the excesses of the French Reign of Terror; the Reform Bill with the enfranchisement of the middle class was almost in view; in industry the Factory System was being founded; and in religion Evangelical convictions were beginning to shape policy

Digitized by Google

and to mould society in all classes. In alliance with a Utilitarian view of morality the spirit of Christianity was bringing about philanthropic reforms on every hand; an improved Poor Law was desired; the condition of prisons was investigated; the crude and almost ferocious system of the penal code was to be mitigated. From all this change no part of the British community was to reap more abundant or more beneficent fruit than our West India Colonies.

The two channels in which the new force flowed in relation to the West Indies, were—(i) a participation in the Evangelical influence that was at work within the Church, and also among the older Dissenting denominations, as well as in the newly-formed organizations of Methodism: this was just spreading over into zeal for the evangelization of the Heathen at the close of the century; the Baptist Missionary Society was founded in 1792; the London Missionary Society, at first actually as it still is theoretically undenominational, 1795; the Church Missionary Society for Africa and the East, 1799; the Religious Tract Society, 1799; the Bible Society, 1804; while the long-established Church Societies for Promoting Christian Knowledge (S.P.C.K.), and the Propagation Society (S.P.G.) were participators in the uprising of enthusiasm. (ii) In combination with this influence political opinion was more and more setting in against the continuance of the Slave Trade and of Slavery itself.

The ruling class in the West Indies, working as it did in intimate connection with the proprietors and merchants and capitalists and annuitants who formed the West Indian "interest" at home, were unable to contemplate the drift of change with any other feelings than alarm, abhorrence, and resentment. In Jamaica these feelings operated in full force; in the Leeward Islands the transition was comparatively calm; in

Digitized by Google

Barbados it was intermittently severe, but in Jamaica it was a period of great perturbation. For unfortunately in addition to past influences such as have been already described, the ruling class in Jamaica had in near view a West Indian "Reign of Terror" of their own; disturbing their minds as the violences of Paris disturbed Edmund Burke and the bulk of Englishmen at home. The French Colony of Hayti lay only 120 miles from Jamaica, nearer than Paris was to Westminster, and there the freeing of the slaves by the French Revolution had led to terrible disorders. In 1791 a thousand plantations were wrecked, 2000 Whites and 10,000 Negroes perished in conflict. An English writer on Colonial history, Mr. E. J. Payne, considers that "the most remarkable spectacle of successful industry (then) in the world" was ruined (*European Colonies*, p. 136). The alarmed Planters of Kingston heard, almost within sound of the shouts and the groans, of the establishment of a Black Republic; soon followed by the exodus of the French Planters, and a law forbidding the possession of land to Whites. What wonder that an outbreak of free Negroes in Jamaica followed; and that the hearts of most of the Whites were hardened against any and every influence which seemed to them to weaken their legitimate control over the Negro population?

The Planting interest both at home and in the islands were compelled to show from time to time that they were alive to the fact that the British people were slowly making up their minds against the old system, and at the same time to endeavour to hold their own in the only way they could conceive to be possible. Consequently, the history of the Colonies from 1800 to 1833 is a story of rapid change, constantly resisted, but incessantly and steadily moving in one direction. Hurried along as they were, all but a few irreconcilables saw the necessity of formulating

Digitized by Google

a policy which might arrest movement; "Amelioration" became the *mot d'ordre* of the Planting interest, as against "Abolition"; and their wits were set to work to produce ameliorations which would disarm opposition, with the least possible alteration in the actual situation.

One of the first steps taken proved their recognition of the religious character of the reforming movement: they decided to liberate and strengthen the Established Church, though still resisting the efforts of the Dissenting Missionary Societies. Rightly or wrongly they associated these latter with the cause of Abolition. It was, indeed, the fact that the leaders of the Emancipation movement were themselves Churchmen: Granville Sharp, Clarkson, Wilberforce, James Stephen, Zachary Macaulay: but these did not constitute the Church officially, no Archbishop or Bishop was prominently with them; while the Dissenting leaders were more or less generally falling into line, at least sufficiently so to make the West Indians regard all Baptist and Methodist Missionaries as being in effect emissaries of the "Anti-Slavery Society" and the "African Institution." Compelled as they were officially to increase their freedom of access to the slaves, they made all the difficulties they could, and in private they took full advantage of the fact that the new laws and regulations and licences were administered by themselves, and could easily be made almost nugatory in effect.

In the movement of these thirty-three years the history of the Church is so closely bound up with the history of social changes, that it is impossible to treat it separately; and the changes themselves moved onward so dramatically towards the *dénouement* of 1833, that their exhibition in the form of brief *Annals* of those years seems the most effective way of dealing with them. The following annalistic notes do not

Digitized by Google

profess to be complete, but they have been gathered from many sources.

1797. A Resolution was passed by the House of Commons advising Planters to take such care of their slaves as would remove all necessity for fresh importations. Accordingly an Act is passed in Jamaica for strengthening the Church, containing these points: (1) the Parish authorities are ordered to carry out their duties with regard to providing and maintaining Churches, or the Legislature will take it out of their hands, execute the work and charge the vestries with the expenditure; (2) every rector to be at once provided with a house, and to enter into residence; (3) the rectors required to allot a portion of each Sunday to the instruction of slaves; (4) Clergy-stipends to be equalized and paid quarterly by the island Treasury; and (5) their widows and orphans to be provided for by a ten per cent. deduction from these stipends.

1798. The Legislature of the Leeward Islands passed an Amelioration Act, providing that hours of labour should be restricted, protecting slaves against cruelties, abolishing iron collars and chains, ordering medical attendance to be provided, directing the encouragement of marriage, and forbidding restraints upon attendance at public worship.

1800. The question of the *control* of the clergy was faced in Jamaica. The Legislature proposed to place it entirely in the Governor's hands, but a reference home resulted in an official opinion by the Attorney-General that this was illegal, and that the Bishop of London's jurisdiction could not be ignored. The Colony accepted this opinion, and in consultation with the Bishop (Porteus, an excellent prelate, and himself long keenly interested in doing all that he could for the slaves as President of the "Christian Faith Society") passed an Act constituting a Commissary Court in the island, consisting of five rectors,

Digitized by Google

selected by the Bishop, with a registrar and apparitors, and certain powers of discipline over the clergy, including suspension or deprivation, with the concurrence of the Governor. Two cases are mentioned —the suspension of a curate for nine months, and of a rector for three years.

1802. The Jamaica Assembly specifically called the attention of Dissenting Missionaries to the necessity of taking out licences: they even went so far as to pass an Act against their preaching to slaves; the Methodist Missionary Society at home appealed, and the Act was disallowed. The Barbados Legislature refused to agree to a Message from the Governor recommending that murder of a slave should be made a felony instead of being punishable only by fine, although it was asked that such conviction should be possible only when there was evidence of some white persons against the culprit. Three years later they thought better of it, and passed the Act suggested.

1804. In Jamaica further rules enforcing residence of rectors, and requiring them to appoint curates if absent for six months.

1807. The Imperial Act abolishing the *Slave Trade* passed.

1807. The stipends of clergy increased in Barbados, as "an act of justice to that worthy and respectable class of men," as the Assembly put it in their Address to the Governor, wishing, no doubt, delicately to ignore the existence of any external pressure. A strong "ordinance" against Dissenters passed by the Corporation of Kingston, Jamaica, with only one dissentient; they were to conduct no services except in open daylight, *i. e.* in Jamaica not much before six in the morning, or much after six in the evening; and no persons were to lend their houses for worship. An Act passed fining proprietors who should allow Dis-

Digitized by Google

senters to instruct slaves, and Missionaries who should admit them to their chapels or houses. Disallowed at home.

1808. The Bishop of London (Porteus) issued a circular letter to the West Indian clergy, recommending Bell's system for Sunday Schools; the rector of St. Joseph, Jamaica, at once commenced such a school, but another school on a private estate, with a schoolmaster specially sent out, proved abortive.

1809. The Governors in the West Indies instructed never to give consent to any laws relating to religion without reference home: this was directed against such Acts as that of Jamaica 1807. (It was really to prevent the Colonies taking action out of harmony with Imperial legislation; just as when in 1749 the Leeward Islands passed an Act admitting Romanists to equal political rights, the Act was disallowed.)

1811. The Lieutenant-Governor of Jamaica took notice that services in church were given up if no Whites were present, and complained of this to the Bishop's Commissaries, who accordingly issued a circular to the clergy.

1811. A planter, Hodge, member of Council of Tortola (Leeward Islands), put on his trial for the death of five slaves; the Governor ordered the Solicitor-General of the Colony to prosecute, and the Councillor was hanged. This demonstration of security of slave-life shows how irrevocable was the progress made at this point. The correspondence on the case was printed by the House of Commons.

1814. Act of Jamaica raised the status of free "coloured people," admitting them as evidence, if Christians, and removing limits upon their capability of receiving bequests. The Assembly passed a Bill incorporating a Presbyterian body, but the Council rejected it; the Assembly, however, voted £5000 to the Presbyterian Church, and later £3500 more, and

Digitized by Google

later still £500 a year, as if to show that they would recognize a religion if only it were Established. (The Presbyterians had not yet begun to move in the Missionary field.)

1815. Formal adoption by the Legislature of Jamaica of the right of slaves to receive instruction. The Church strengthened for this purpose; a curate with £300 a year (later raised to £500) attached to each parish, and chapels of ease to be built. Fees reduced; that for Baptism to be 2*s.* 6*d.*; and the Bishop of London to be applied to for a supply of additional clergy. This reads excellently, and as it appears definitely to initiate a fresh policy, it must be scrutinized. Doubts have been expressed whether it had any substantial purpose; whether, in fact, it was designed to initiate a new policy for the good of the slaves, or was little better than a blind drawn over the eyes of the watchful friends of the slave in England. It is quite certain that the Act had small results, so far as the slaves were concerned. What took place was that the rectors obtained at the public expense the assistance of curates for their ordinary duties, as already discharged; in no way engrossing, as we have seen, except to the few who were thoroughly conscientious. For this miscarriage we are referred to two possible causes: (*a*) the feeble character of the curates who were secured, finding as they did the arduous work of instructing an ignorant and degraded slave-class less to their minds than the society of the higher classes, and so speedily absorbing from these the prevailing opinion that their proper enterprise was really Quixotic; or (*b*) that the Planters and attorneys made no real effort in support of the curates. If this latter was the principal cause, then the Planters stand convicted of double-dealing; by their representatives they voted large sums in the Assembly for a purpose which in their private capaci-

Digitized by Google

ties they had no intention of assisting. Stewart is of opinion that this was the fact, and points out as an example, that no change was made in the necessity the slaves were under of employing most of their Sundays on their own plots. One curate wrote to a Jamaica paper, repudiating blame for himself and his colleagues; he said that in no instance had a plantation accepted his services or given him facilities. The rector of Clarendon parish found only two estates willing to receive his curate. And the Planters' advocate, Bridges, seems to testify to this being the truth, as he sets up a justification in the growing financial difficulties of the Planters, and the necessity of their working the slaves to their utmost capacity.

The resolution of Assembly which gave rise to this Act had included an unreserved expression of antagonism to the Dissenters. The Assembly resolved to take into consideration "the means of diffusing the light of genuine Christianity"—the most rigid Erastian could hardly care to see the adjudication of "genuineness" as between the different Christian bodies placed in the hands of the Jamaica Assembly of 1815—"divested of the dark and dangerous fanaticism of the Methodists which has been attempted to be propagated, and which, grafted on the African superstitions and working on the uninstructed and ardent temperament of the Negro, has produced the most pernicious consequences to individuals, and is pregnant with imminent dangers to the community."

1815. Opposition to the Dissenters in Kingston relaxed; the Methodist Chapel re-opened. In Antigua some lists of baptisms were printed showing since 1803, 2700 for the parish clergy; 2800 for the Church Missionary Society Missionaries; 2000 for the Methodists and 1300 for the Moravians. The stipends of the Barbados clergy to be increased: but the Council did not acquiesce.

Digitized by Google

1816. A Moravian Missionary "mentions with delight having for the first time met with a black man who was able to read" in Jamaica.

1816. The Antigua Assembly thinks it unnecessary to provide for safety against insurrections, having confidence that moral and religious principles were increasing in influence over the whole community.

1817. The slaves throughout the West Indies placed on Registers. This measure was due to the British Parliament. In Jamaica the local Act was passed only under strong pressure from the Governor, acting under his instructions from home. Bridges gives some pages of lamentation over the violation of constitutional liberties involved in this pressure—recalling inevitably to memory Dr. Johnson's impatient query with regard to the American Planters, "How is it that we hear the loudest yelps for liberty from the drivers of Negroes?" In Barbados the opposition was milder, and ostensibly was an objection to the expense. There were found to be 345,000 of all ages in Jamaica: in Barbados 77,000; that is to say, over half-a-million in all. The friends of the slaves were sagacious in pressing this measure forward: it was of more efficacy than might at first have seemed to be likely. Now that importation had been stopped, a periodical registration would show how the several estates treated their slaves, so far as total increase or decrease would show it. The resistance the Registration met with was the measure of the advantage to the slave-population.

In this year many inhabitants of Kingston contributed handsomely to the erection of Wesley Chapel, including several members of the Corporation: no refusal through hostile motives was received by the collectors: several Magistrates attended the opening services. Per contra, the rector of St. Thomas parish declares against the value of church attendance for

Digitized by Google

slaves, and acquiesces in their not coming to his catechizings on the ground of their "defects of understanding."

1818. In Barbados killing a slave, even by the owner, made a felony more clearly; but it was not until 1826 that a conviction took place; possibly none was needed. The Custos (an official like a Lord-Lieutenant of a County) of Falmouth, Jamaica, invites a Missionary to settle in that parish. A young clergyman, one of those who came out after the Act of 1815, officiating for the rector of Kingston, raised the Communicants to 600 within a year; another, Mr. Trew, labouring earnestly, gained the esteem of Dissenters at the same time: the rector of St. David approves the issue of licences to Missionaries. The Combermere Charity School, Barbados, founded for children of colour and negroes: thirty-two out of eighty-nine of the scholars were children of slaves.

1819. The Central School for white children of the subordinate class founded in Barbados, by co-operation of legislature and vestry, with private subscriptions. A local Committee of the Christian Knowledge Society founded in the same island. About this time a historian of Methodist Missions (Samuel, pp. 133, 168, 245, 274) records a most friendly magistrate at Port Antonio; a physician at Bath opening his house for preaching; a vestry granting a Missionary £100; an estate, Strong Hill, where all proprietors and managers were favourable; a white man accepting the leadership of a Society Class.

1820. The Missionaries of the Christian Faith Society, being confined to the policy of "Amelioration," received support from the ruling classes; a member of Assembly of Jamaica even officiating as "clerk" at some of their services, and the Missionaries reported home that they received assistance from many quarters of the island.

Digitized by Google

1822. Owing to the prevalent opinion that the Commissaries' Court was of no use, the salaries of its officers were suppressed.

1823. A riot against Dissenters broke out in Barbados: the Wesleyan Chapel in Bridgetown was destroyed: the Governor proclaimed a reward for the detection of the offenders, but without result.

Mr. Bridges the Annalist, a clergyman who came out in 1806, recites that he had about this time baptized in three years 12,000 slaves, and married 3897 couples, a recital which naturally raises strong doubts as to the substantiality of the proceedings in the mind of another historian, Gardner (a Congregationalist).

In England the subject of the West Indies now definitely came to the front, and the Cabinet of the day met Parliament with a plan. Canning was the Minister in charge, and he based his proposals on Amelioration. He believed that enfranchisement would have to come, but at a more or less distant date: meanwhile he expressly declared that if the condition of the slaves is to be improved, "that improvement is to be introduced through the medium of the masters." A series of Resolutions was proposed to the House of Commons, and passed, which they invited the Colonial legislatures to adopt, and which the Government decided itself to carry out in the newly-acquired Colonies of Trinidad, Demerara, and St. Lucia. These being directly under the Crown the Government could act in them as it pleased. Considerable attention was given in these resolutions to removing stigmas from the slaves: females were no longer to be flogged; the whip was not to be carried by the "Drivers" in the field, but used only in a systematic manner as a punishment. These proposals met with different receptions in the Colonies: in St. Kitts they were accepted, in Barbados ignored, while Jamaica retained her grim pre-eminence by violently protest-

Digitized by Google

ing against them. A new-comer among the Colonies (Dominica) seems to have contemplated organizing a Colonial resistance. The resistance to them in Guiana caused the "Smith of Demerara" outrage, one of the most signal instances of the blindness of furious men to their own objects. If the advocates of the slaves had desired to raise up uncontrollable indignation on the part of people in England, could they have done better than invent the case of a man leaving England under the missionary impulse for an unhealthy clime, as it certainly was then, devoting himself with assiduity to his calling amongst a godless and neglected population, thrust into prison, sentenced to death, and dying from the foul confinement of a tropical prison before he could be executed, and all without the means of proof that he had anything to do with social disorders? This wicked folly was perpetrated upon John Smith, an Independent missionary, and it won friends to the cause of Abolition in every corner of England. Churchmen are glad to be able to separate themselves wholly from these proceedings: the chief clergyman of Georgetown, W. S. Austin, was driven from the Colony because of his vigorous support of John Smith; a support fully shared by a lawyer who became afterwards, as Sir William Arrindell, "one of the most respected Chief Justices the West Indies have ever known." But the main constructive feature in the measure showed how far the Evangelical revival had brought English thought through the scepticism of the 18th century, for we find the Cabinet turning to religion for aid. Canning announced that the Government had decided to *strengthen the Church in the West Indies* by constituting two dioceses there: the administrative expenditure of which would be provided from the Imperial Exchequer. Words would fail a narrator who should attempt to describe the feelings of loyal Churchmen as

Digitized by Google

they saw the bread cast on the waters by the Berkeleys and Wilsons now after many days being gathered by the Church. It was now to be no consecration in Scotland like Seabury's for the United States; but the prosperous precedent of the consecrations of Middleton (1814) and Heber (1823) for India was to be followed and the whole authority of Church and State officially engaged in the conferring of full Episcopacy upon our Caribbean Colonies. The year 1824 saw the new Sees constituted and a fresh era in the history of the Church in the West Indies inaugurated. The Colonies were grouped into two dioceses, that of Jamaica including also the Bahamas and our settlements in Honduras: that of Barbados including also St. Vincent, Grenada, Antigua and the other Leeward Islands, with Trinidad and Guiana. The Message of the Governor of Jamaica (the Duke of Manchester) to his Legislature announced this great event in the following terms:—

"I am also to acquaint you that his Majesty has been graciously pleased to appoint a Bishop for this island to whom is to be intrusted the control of the clergy of the Church of England within his diocess, and the duty of reporting upon the state of the Ecclesiastical Establishment particularly as it relates to the slave population, and upon the best means of diffusing the benefits of religious instruction to (*sic*) that part of the Community. In order to prove the deep interest which his Majesty's Government feel in the encouragement of the religious and moral instruction of the negroes, they have taken upon themselves the whole charge of putting the clergy under episcopal control, and have placed funds at the disposal of the Bishop for the more immediate supply of persons in holy orders within his diocess; and his Majesty confidently expects to receive every assistance from you in promoting the establishment of a system calculated to produce the most beneficial effects."

Digitized by Google

The amount charged on the British Exchequer for Jamaica was for the Bishop £5600 a year in Colonial currency, £2800 for an Archdeacon, and £2500 for six additional curates, a total of £10,900, equivalent at six-tenths to £6540 sterling. And similarly for Barbados. The Legislature of Barbados at once gave full recognition to the Bishop: his Court was a "Court of the island" in which the same laws over the clergy would be administered as obtained in England; they assisted by a reduction of fees for duties and a corresponding increase of Treasury stipend. In Jamaica a similar court was set up: the control of leave of absence to the clergy was transferred from the Governor to the Bishop. Fees were reduced, indeed for slaves abolished; the services of the clergy were to be a common right of all classes of the population: slave marriages to be recognized and registered. In both Colonies Sunday markets were abolished (Barbados 1827) and a week-day granted for the cultivation of provision grounds. Workhouses, hospitals, and gaols were to be visited by the clergy.

At a crisis like this much depended upon the men appointed to be the first Bishops. In both cases a successful choice was made. Dr. Christopher Lipscomb proved an administrator of energy and discretion in Jamaica. But the diocese of Barbados was particularly happy in the acceptance of that See by a member of one of the most distinguished of English families, the Coleridges. William Hart Coleridge was a worthy member of that great family, and as one of the first Colonial Bishops added lustre to its distinctions: he very nearly took out John Keble as his Archdeacon, the only offer of preferment in the Church which the author of the *Christian Year* is known to have ever received. Novel, delicate, and arduous as was the work, by character and by training the first Bishops were fitted for it; and very soon the Church felt their impulse in every parish of the West India

Digitized by Google

islands. A few figures seem necessary to show the extent of the new activity. Within a very few years thirteen new churches were built in Jamaica, the clergy increased from about thirty to forty-five, and thirty-two catechists and schoolmasters were at work, while religious instruction was in operation on 280 estates. In Barbados diocese ten years saw the clergy increase from fifteen to twenty-seven, schools from eight to 125.

The supply of clergy was a difficulty. Bishop Coleridge saw that it would not be easy to keep up an adequate supply from England, although some good men were induced to go out, including men from the Universities. He accordingly took in hand the Codrington Trust bequest, and with his advice the Trustees (the Propagation Society) re-constituted it according to its proper design as a training college for clergy primarily, and a place of higher lay-education besides. A West Indian clergyman of singular gifts was on the spot as Chaplain to the Estates and was secured as the first Principal, John Hothersall Pinder. And it is a singular distinction for the West Indies that this Bishop and the man he chose for this post were able in after years to become pioneers of noble institutions in England: the Bishop was the first Warden of the first Missionary College, St. Augustine's, Canterbury, and Mr. Pinder was the first Principal of the most successful of all the Theological Colleges, that of Wells. It was 1834 before the Bishop held his first Ordination; and continuously since then Codrington College has supplied a large proportion of the clergy to the southern islands and some members to all. (See Chapter VIII.)

1824. A law passed in the newly-acquired Colonies Demerara, Essequibo and Berbice, now known as "British Guiana," giving State endowment to three Established Churches; the Church of England, the Scottish Presbyterian, and the Dutch Reformed; and some provision for Romanists.

1825. A Ladies' Association for assisting the sick

Digitized by Google

and poor formed in Barbados in connection with the Church. A Bill for admitting evidence of slaves if baptized, rejected in Jamaica; the clergy divided on this in their opinion: Mr. Trew and the rector of Kingston for the law; the rectors of St. Ann and St. John against it. In 1826 by the advice of the Governor the Bill was re-introduced, and passed as an experiment; but on its arrival at home it was rejected by Mr. Huskisson as insufficient, and because it was interlaced with inadmissible matter, especially further restrictions on Dissenters. In 1827 the renewal urged, in 1829 passed again, but again in a form that was disallowed. The Planters declared that the slaves would not hold themselves bound by oaths in our Courts so much as by their own oaths over graves with dirt-eating and blood-drinking.

1826. The first Moravian day-school opened in Jamaica. Evening schools attempted but abandoned: the children too tired to profit by them; as one of them said, "sleep hab no massa." It was not different with the children in our factory districts at that very time; a comparison, by the way, which the West Indians at home were by no means slow to make. The stipends of the clergy again increased in Barbados.

1827. The rector of St. Lucy, Barbados, agitated against as inculcating "equality" in his teaching, tried and found guilty of misdemeanour; fined one shilling, pardoned by the Crown; he was supported by the Bishop, both personally and officially, and no doubt this settled the matter with the Crown advisers.

Between 1825-27 attempts were made to brighten the Public Services in the parish church, Kingston, by musical rendering of the Canticles and responses to the Commandments; an organ was built; the effect was greatly to increase congregations, especially as regards the Negroes; but after ten months the new methods were suppressed by the Bishop, "without

Digitized by Google

reason assigned." "The service resumed its wonted monotony—the Dissenters triumphed, and the church was again deserted" (Bridges). The other diocese was more fortunate in the sympathy of the Bishop with such changes; Bishop Coleridge in his Charges frequently urged the adoption of music.

1828. The constitution of Codrington College commenced. Committee of Jamaica Assembly reported against Dissenting Missionaries, alleging that a lengthy examination led them to hold that the principal object of the Missionaries was to extort money from their congregations, that doctrines of equality were inculcated, and odium cast on the authorities. Rural Deaneries instituted.

1831. It was at this time thoroughly believed at home that the Slaves were better off in the new Crown Colonies than in the old constitutionally governed Colonies. This was felt to be intolerable, and representations from home were so strong that at last the Jamaica Legislature passed a Slave Code without some of the clauses chiefly objected to, but still falling far short of what the Governor urged. Great animosity was felt against the Governor on account of the pressure he exercised. In this year there broke out the most serious Negro insurrection in the history of Jamaica; no previous outbreak had involved over 500 people, as Bridges acknowledges. It was very commonly attributed to the Baptists, and a section of the White community became infuriated. In 1832 the infamous "Colonial Church Union"—noble name for an ignoble enterprise—was formed; chapels were burned down, Missionaries assaulted and illegally imprisoned; one rector at least (Hanover parish) was among the incendiaries. The purity of the Church feeling may be gathered from the fact that the Union included some Presbyterians, and it is said that the Jews took advantage of it in order to vent their

Digitized by Google

animosity on the Missionaries. The slaves, on the other hand, were persuaded, or themselves caught up the idea, that the King had set them free, but the local authorities kept his act secret and would not carry it out. In this insurrection 200 slaves were killed in the open field, and 500 executed.

1830-31. Primary Charge of Bishop Coleridge, containing gratifying notices of the increase of clergy, churches, congregations, and schools; of an improved observance of the Sabbath, of Marriage, of public Burial; with better Psalmody.

The great Hurricane of Barbados; high commendation of the action of the Bishop and clergy publicly given by the Governor and by the Assembly.

1832. The Reform Bill passed in England; a large section of the Middle class admitted to participate in public affairs.

A Friendly Society formed among the Black labourers attending the parish church, St. John, Antigua.

1833. In April of this year there came to England the memorable deputation from the Baptists of Jamaica, Knibb, Burchell, and Philipps. They came home because as Baptist pastors they were unable any longer to restrain their vital sympathy with the slaves and their abhorrence of Slavery. They saw the flames of Slave-chapels replying to the flames of Planters' cane-fields and estate-houses, and in their consciences judged that the crisis had come. The English people must be asked as one of their very first political decisions whether slavery was acceptable and possible, or not. The Deputation was received at home with great warmth, and the natural gifts of these men proved the instruments of deciding the sentiment of all Evangelical Christians in a manner which could not be mistaken. The Parliamentary labours of Wilberforce and Buxton were now reinforced by a volume of popular opinion and enthusiasm

Digitized by Google

which closed the controversy. Mr. Stanley (afterwards Lord Derby), as Secretary of State, said in his place in Parliament, that the careful and repeated recommendations sent to the Local Legislatures in the West Indies had failed to produce due results, and to satisfy the legitimate demands of the people of Great Britain and Ireland. The Government had therefore decided to call upon the Imperial Parliament to intervene. Slavery must be abolished. The Emancipation Act was passed that same year.

To become law it had to pass the Local Legislatures. But enough was conveyed to them by their friends in England of the peremptory tone of Parliament to awe them from opposition. They all gave way, even in Jamaica. In fact four members out of the thirty in that Assembly voted for the immediate abolition of Slavery without the apprenticeship interval of seven years laid down in the Imperial Act. In the Barbados Assembly some mutilations were attempted which had to be put right before their share of the Compensation money was handed over. In Antigua it passed without the apprenticeship clauses at all; complete emancipation of the slaves in that Colony followed upon the passing of the Act.

The great revolution was effected, one of the landmarks of the history of human progress set up. It is beyond question that the strengthening of the Church just nine years previously had untold effect in bringing Emancipation into the sphere of practical politics. In 1824 Canning thought it an approaching event, but still a remote one; in that same year he was the Cabinet Minister who proposed one of the very measures which rendered its immediate arrival demonstrably advantageous. The new Bishops and their clergy were a means of winning confidence and healing the breach between the upper and lower classes by the bond of Christian fellowship. Bishop

Digitized by Google

Coleridge in his Charges to the clergy was most insistent on the great importance of endeavouring to secure the goodwill of Masters and Managers for the work with the Negroes. It lost half its value if done against them, he always said. Possibly the clergy were not as definitely and openly on the side of Emancipation as the Dissenters rapidly became, and as we in our day should like to have seen them. Where there was persecution there was protest, in some cases, at least. W. S. Austin, one of the earliest of our Demerara clergy, supported the persecuted Missionary, Smith, so strongly that he was driven from the Colony himself. But in the main they proceeded in a quiet confidence that the Church had the work of *peace* to perform before all things, and were content to leave the great change to be brought about without their intervention. From what we read in Bishop Coleridge's earnest Charges, ordination addresses, and sermons, we can be quite satisfied that in taking their stand upon their earnestness in pastoral work among *all* classes they were preparing a state of social opinion that went far towards rendering this mighty social revolution one of the most peaceful ever accomplished in history.

It had been asserted, and no doubt with genuine alarm, that Emancipation would immediately light up incendiary fires; that devastated plantations and murdered planters and overseers, and their families would cover the fair face of the West India Islands, while in Saturnalian indulgences the enfranchised multitudes would run wild riot. And the recent example of Hayti was fresh enough in memory to give vividness to the excited imaginations. *The event was wholly different.* No outrage whatever took place; and the very first two years after emancipation showed by reports of the stipendiary Magistrates of Jamaica a remarkable absence of ordinary crime!

Digitized by Google

Macaulay says that the two greatest reforms in English history were the amalgamation of the Norman and Anglo-Saxon races, and the gradual abolition of villenage; and that both of these were won by the clergy from the laity. For "clergy" read "religion," and we can say that it stands out as one of the most signal triumphs of religion in human history that Emancipation was regarded by the freed slaves themselves as a religious boon to be received with pious gratitude and celebrated with religious rites. The last hours of slavery and the first hours of freedom were spent in churches and chapels. And the new centres round which the emancipated rallied were neither ignorant agitators nor firebrand orators holding out plunder and rapine as now within reach, but the Missionaries, pastors, deacons and class-leaders of Christian congregations.

By the Baptists at Kingston, a chain, a whip, and a collar were placed in a coffin, and with grim humour buried in the chapel-yard. The memorial tablet which was placed over this tomb of a moral tyranny bore the likenesses of Wilberforce, Sharp, and Sturge, with that of Knibb below. And the inscription beginning with *Deo Gloria!* went on to hail the abolition of Slavery throughout the British Colonies as "the Day-spring of Universal Liberty to all Nations of Men, whom God hath made of one blood." And underneath was inscribed the text—"Ethiopia shall soon stretch out her hands unto God."

If as Churchmen we have regretfully to remember that in this honourable leadership a larger share of the Negroes' confidence was possessed by the Dissenting leaders than by the clergy of the Church, we shall give honour where it is due, and only claim for ourselves that as our Church, little other than a parody for two centuries, had been her living self for less than a short ten years, the share we were permitted

Digitized by Google

to have was one for which we are grateful: we were nearly being excluded altogether. Thenceforward we had only to proceed on the lines laid down in those ten years, and a large share of the pastoral charge of the free Negroes of the West Indies was certain to be our high reward.

NOTE.—During the period covered by this Chapter our attention has been concentrated upon the older Colonies. Our recent conquests, Trinidad, Guiana and St. Lucia, hardly come into the main line of history yet. They were under direct Imperial authority. They were but sparsely settled, and the Roman Church was already in occupation (the Dutch Church in Guiana). Consequently the Church of England has practically no history to show for the years 1800—1834 in these places, nor the Dissenting Missions either. A few scattered clergy, situated more like Chaplains than incumbents, ministered in the chief towns to very scanty congregations, that was all. Canning's resolutions of 1823 had included an undertaking that the Crown would apply itself to the amelioration of these Colonies, but official activity was confined to the inclusion of these islands in the jurisdiction of the Bishop and the Archdeacons of Barbados and the Leeward Islands. Dr. Coleridge and his Archdeacons certainly included these new Colonies in their anxious care, but their first efforts naturally were given to the older and more thickly peopled Colonies.

From figures collected by the Bishop, we can glean the following representative information:

Population in 1834	Clergy			Church Schools for Poor		
	1812,	1825,	1834.	1812,	1825,	1834.
Trinidad ... 41,000	no report	2	2	0	2	4
Tobago ... 14,000	1	1	1	0	0	13
St. Lucia ... 18,000	0	1	1	0	0	3
St. Vincent 22,000	1	2	4	0	0	16
Grenada ... 30,000	3	2	5	0	0	27
Guiana ... 75,000	1	7	10	0	0	37
Dominica ... 17,000	1	1	2	0	0	4

Remembering that these few clergy would be occupied chiefly with the white people, we are prepared to accept the opinion of the Baptist Commissioner, Dr. Underhill, on the condition of one of these Colonies, Trinidad, that it was utterly unprepared for giving Emancipation any religious character.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE PERIOD IMMEDIATELY SUCCEEDING EMANCIPATION, 1833—1870

Imperial assistance to Religion and Education—Liberality of Local Legislatures—S.P.G. Negro Education Fund—C.M.S., Nonconformist Societies—Increase of Clergy—Catechists and Schoolmasters—Increased resort to Offices of the Church—Lay Help—Education—Benevolent Institutions—Encouragement of Industrious Habits—Missionary Enterprise engaged in—The Church in Colonies acquired since 1763: Relation to Church of Rome in some of these—Endowment question—Education—Denominational system secured—Compromise as to Establishment in Guiana—The Bahamas—British Honduras—Statistics of religious bodies in 1870.

THE great social revolution was accomplished. Although the legal status of Apprenticeship still confined the liberties of the Negroes in all the Colonies except Antigua, the vital principle was asserted in the Act; and as the Apprenticeship period was afterwards shortened, and actually ceased in 1838, it may be neglected; from the date of Emancipation, August 1, 1834, freedom in all substantial respects began. From the point of view of the Church, this meant on the one hand full recognition of human personality and consequent absolute removal of all restrictions on the contact of the Church with the Negroes; and on the other hand full liberty to the Negroes themselves to listen to the Christian message, to accept its invitations, and to enjoy its benefits and its promises. We

Digitized by Google

are able now to see how timely was the restoration of Church order in 1824: a priceless ten years was granted in which to set out the first lines of work, and then, when Emancipation came, the Bishops were at their post with an increased clergy, and some little experience already acquired. The clergy were no longer a number of isolated pastors: Bishops with their Archdeacons, and, since 1828, Rural Deans, inculcated order and exercised authority; an illustration of the effect is seen in the Bishop of Barbados' statement at his visitation, that 72 out of the 73 Clergy in that diocese were in residence on their cures.

In coping with the new situation the Established Church obtained some slight assistance from the Imperial Government. The £20,000 a year voted in 1824 was continued; although when the number of Bishops and Archdeacons was increased in 1842, no addition was made to the grant. A "King's Letter" was granted to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, that is, authority in the name of the King to make collections in all churches. There was also a Grant of £5000 for Normal Schools, £25,000 for School-houses, and Education Grants of some £30,000 a year until 1842, and lesser grants till 1846. Of these amounts £62,000 were paid to the special Negro Education Fund of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and £6600 to the Scottish Missionary Society.

Much more important however was the procedure of the Island Governments. Freed as the ruling classes now were from the obstruction of the Slave system, they could choose between the benign influences of the rising spirit of progressive philanthropy at home, or the sullen rancour which too often remains in the hearts of supporters of lost causes. To their honour it was the former influence which prevailed. Throughout the islands both legislatures and vestries

Digitized by Google

braced themselves up to the immediate furtherance of the instruction of the emancipated labourers, and it was upon the clergy and the missionaries of all denominations that they relied. In Jamaica the vestries came forward with so much money that the Bishop was obliged to write that it was difficult for him to meet their votes with the corresponding supplies from other sources which the vestries required. In 1840 the Jamaica Assembly doubled the number of curates by a single vote, and increased the stipends by £100 a year. In 1841 £66,000 were paid out to the Church, including Vestry grants, besides the grants to Nonconformists.

"Co-operation is universal," writes the Bishop. In Tobago a grant from the S.P.G. of £433 for a School-Chapel was met by the Legislature with £2200: an additional rector and curate were placed on the list, and a vote in aid of schools passed. In Trinidad the Bishop found "a noble spirit throughout all classes connected with our Church, from the Governor downwards"; the island was divided into seventeen parishes, and a stipend allotted to each as soon as clergy should be found, and a grant to the extent of half the cost promised for every new church. In Guiana the legislative grants for the years 1836-7-8 amounted to £15,635 for churches, £19,373 for clergy and catechists, and £3615 for houses or rents.

As time went, and the S.P.G. felt that the crisis was over, and that its funds were required for other parts of the world, the Society gradually withdrew most of its aid to the West Indies, when the Island Governments promptly took up the responsibility: in Barbados, for example, six "Missionaries" were at once placed on the list of stipendiary clergy.

The State authorities did well: but the Church at home was at least equally forward in coming to the

Digitized by Google

assistance of the West Indian churches. The Propagation Society resolved upon "a great and immediate effort." It took the form of a "Negro Education Fund," to which the Society itself allotted in the sixteen years commencing with 1835 no less than £85,000; some £24,000 besides was added to it by the S.P.C.K., the Christian Faith Society, and West Indians in England; and the Government, as already mentioned, added some £62,000 more. The aggregate of £171,000 was divided (except £7000 which went to Mauritius) almost equally between (1) Missionaries, (2) Teachers, and (3) Church and School buildings. The Christian Faith Society made direct grants to the Bishops for curates, catechists, and schools; the grant to Jamaica diocese was £500 a year, to Barbados diocese £700: to be spent in small sums and on schools rather than clergy, and always to be temporary, and not so as to become settled expectancies. The Church Missionary Society increased its agents and its stations in Jamaica, and secured some excellent Missionaries. The S.P.C.K. made free grants of Prayer Books, and the Bible Society of Bibles, and the Religious Tract Society also assisted.

The crisis was adjudged to be surmounted in about fifteen years, so far as these Societies were concerned. The C.M.S. Missionaries were gradually placed on the Establishment in Jamaica, and fresh ones were not sent out, as this Society—formed, be it remembered, "for Africa and the East"—discontinued expenditure in the West Indies. In 1849 the S.P.G. considered that its work in the older islands might safely be left, and during the remainder of this period its connection was confined to the Trusteeship of the Codrington Estates. In Trinidad and Guiana it continued, for special reasons. But in another quarter the Colonial (now amalgamated with the Continental) Church Society began operations about this time, sending a

Digitized by Google

lay-agent to the Bahamas in 1843. Their scale of operations, however, was always small.

With these efforts we may compare those made by the London Missionary Society, which resumed some operations in Demerara brought to an untimely close ten years before by the "Smith disturbances," and also in Jamaica; the Wesleyan Missionary Society, which at one time expended £4000 a year in Jamaica; and the Baptists, and the Society of Friends, sent contributions to schools and some friendly visitors. These Societies also considered that they were not called upon to regard these Colonies as permanent objects for Missionary expenditure. The Baptists of Jamaica celebrated the Jubilee of the Baptist Missionary Society by relieving the Society from all farther claims, their 142 chapels, with 31,000 communicants, having become self-supporting, except as to their Ministers' College; but the Society continued to assist in other islands. The Wesleyans of Jamaica were involved in some differences with the home Society, and with a final donation of £6000 became independent; the London Missionary Society continued assistance somewhat longer, but by 1867 had only one Missionary in British Guiana. The Moravian church was dependent upon Central authorities still longer, until 1879, when resolutions for separation were adopted.

CHURCH ACTIVITY IN THE WEST INDIES.

Strengthened by well-wishers at home, and enjoying the co-operation of the Colonial Governments and Vestries, the Church of England in the West Indies proceeded with vigour and courage to her noble task.

(1) *The Clergy.*—The first care was the increase of the Ministry, and its better organization. This proceeded so rapidly that ten years after 1833, when the new Bishop of Jamaica (Spencer) held his primary

Digitized by Google

visitation, he was met by seventy-five clergy, "a larger number than had ever before been assembled out of England and Ireland." In the Southern islands Codrington College began to assist in the supply, and in the Barbados diocese the 37 clergy of 1815, the 50 of 1825, the 81 of 1834 had become 99 in 1838.

As to quality, a lay writer in Antigua (Mrs. Lanagan) speaks of there being, in 1844, "an enlightened and evangelical clergy" in that island; and Dr. Underhill, in 1862, ascribes some decline of Baptist congregations to the fact that many Negroes were now resorting to the churches. The Bishops themselves were increased in 1842, on the retirement of Bishop Coleridge; the diocese of Barbados was relieved of the charge of Antigua and the Leeward Islands, which were formed into the new diocese of Antigua; and of British Guiana, now the diocese of Guiana. All three of the new Bishops were men of West Indian experience: Archdeacon Parry (Barbados), Daniel Gateward Davis (Antigua), and William Piercy Austin (Guiana).

This increase led to a more constant supervision of the labours of the clergy; to their being called together to visitations, to their furnishing reports of their work for the Bishops' inspection and advice, and, when necessary, their authoritative direction: and the general movement towards that order which is implied in the Episcopal constitution of the Church. A sign of unity was seen in the institution of a Central Church Fund in Jamaica, but that proved premature, and it failed to be effective.

(2) *Subsidiary Orders.*—The first Bishops were quick to see the advisability of supplementing the pastoral labours of the clergy by the institution of other offices, Catechist, Reader, and Schoolmaster, often held in combination. Some of these were held by men giving their whole time to religious work; others, *e.g.* the

Digitized by Google

Schoolmasters, undertook it in addition to their ordinary duties, although the large place occupied by religious instruction in the school-teaching made that work by no means one that could be adequately described as secular, even on week-days. Some of the Catechists had fixed stations, others itinerated from estate to estate, or village to village, as these sprang into existence. Perhaps the Bishops and clergy were somewhat over-eager in making appointments before men were quite ready; Gardner says that some "book-keepers in Jamaica who were employed in this way were in no sense religious men." But the same historian says of many of the Baptist deacons that they were "drawbacks to the advance of the people." Still, everything could not be of very high order at the outset, and as time went on more selection was possible. Bishop Coleridge required of his Catechists that they should be "men able to read well, instructed in psalmody;"—the good Bishop always had his ear open for Music in the public services,—"and competent to explain in a familiar way to the Negroes any common word or passage of Scripture, or in the lesson-books of School." And he always invited these men to his Visitations, and addressed special words of advice and encouragement to them in his Charges. The time had not come for Lay Readers as purely voluntary workers but with definite status and duties, either there or in England.

(3) *The Offices of the Church.*—Civil freedom carried with it, of course, open access to the offices of the Church, and there now lay before Churchmen the noble task of impressing upon the enfranchised the virtues of the Christian Sacraments and Sacramentals.

(*a*) *Baptism.* — Baptisms and Confirmations increased rapidly. There were difficulties and perplexities in abundance, of the same kind as those which face all Missionaries in their work; whether sponsors

Digitized by Google

should be insisted on; who should be regarded as fit to be sponsors; the precise degree of instruction required for adult baptism, and so on. Bishop Coleridge's Charges abound in careful expressions of advice upon these important points.

(*b*) *Holy Communion.*—The pressure to become Communicants showed the strong inclination of the Negro for religious rites; here was the highest rite, and he was impulsively eager to take part in it. The Altar required guarding rather than being made easy of access. A system of tutelage was perforce adopted by the clergy, such as is common in Missionary work among impulsive races. Suspension from privilege was freely enforced; and, it should be added, humbly acquiesced in by offenders. Sentences of suspension, and the withdrawal of "tickets," were accepted without murmur, and on their expiry the offender—we cannot but believe genuinely repentant in his own conscience—seldom failed to present himself for penitential discipline and readmission.

From the outset Bishop Coleridge remonstrated strongly against the continuance of the custom of leaving an interval between the retirement of the Whites from the Altar and the approach of the Blacks.

(*c*) *Marriage.*—The celebration of the marriage of white people in private houses and outside canonical hours was steadily discouraged. Upon the Negro population the institution was pressed with unfailing insistence, a course in which the Nonconformists vied in honourable emulation with the Church. But the movement was very slow. At first there was an appearance almost of a "rush." The Barbados returns for 1835 (a year after Emancipation), and next following years, show as follows—634, 939, 980, 1471, 1909, 1371, 1120, 1139, 1047, 779. This is out of a population of 130,000; according to the marriage rate in England at that time the number would have been

Digitized by Google

just about 1000; but the point to be observed is the rise up to 1909 followed by decline. Even so, these numbers are the result of many marriages being entered upon by people of middle life, who could not marry before Emancipation, and are not the normal marrying population, which has not even yet attained to anything like the English ratio, as we shall find later on. There were some obstacles to Marriage, such as the fact that many Negroes were already involved in connections polygamous and other. But the greatest obstacle appeared to be ingrained in the Negro character, a reluctance to rise to the level of Christian marriage, which even the unswerving exhortations of respected clergy, pastors, and class-leaders, backed by his own strong leaning for religious society and religious ceremonies, proved unable to overcome. Further attention will be given to this vital point later on; for this period we can only record that the Church made marriage easy, that many of the upper classes assisted with personal persuasion, but that progress was exceedingly slow.

With regard to the White classes the prevailing open concubinage received a great check, although there was a very unsatisfactory dilatoriness in allowing the subordinate whites either stipends or residential accommodation such as to render marriage feasible. The remedy for this came about partly in the shrinking of the book-keeper and overseer class of whites, and their replacement more and more by men of some colour. The opening out of emigration to the States and Australia carried the young men of Great Britain elsewhere than to the Sugar plantations. But the general elevation was undoubted. A sagacious observer, Dr. Davy, a brother of Sir Humphrey, goes so far as to say (*West Indies*, p. 74.), "What the hurricane of 1831 did for the physical atmosphere of Barbados, Emancipation effected for its moral and domestic

Digitized by Google

atmosphere." And of the people of colour he understood that whereas formerly "a woman of colour considered it an honour to become the mistress of a white man, and coveted the connection, she now—1853—avoids it as a disgrace."

(*d*) *Burial.*—This was transformed into a Christian rite. Hitherto many burials had taken place in retired places on the Estates; in the case of the slaves without any rites other than the heathen customs which they had brought over from Africa. The burials soon began to take place in churchyards and chapel yards, and, of course, with religious services. At the same time the burial of the rich white people in vaults underneath the churches was discouraged, on sanitary grounds, of course.

The Registration of Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths was made the rule so far as the Church was concerned: in Jamaica the Government sent for sets of Register-Books from England at great expense for use in the vestries.

(*e*) *Public Worship.*—Attendance became common on Sundays as a matter of course. Bishop Coleridge pressed on his clergy the observance of Holy Days and Public Prayers on Wednesdays and Fridays.

The churches themselves were not notable examples of architecture. The older ones were fitted with galleries, and with increased seating accommodation on the ground floor, to provide for the increased congregations. The great pressure to get the new ones built would have prevented much thought being given to architecture, even had it not been that there were also two other obstacles to this: (1) the liability of many islands to hurricane with frequent ruin of buildings, and consequent disinclination to add expensive ornamentation, and (2) the depressed state of Church architecture in England itself at that time. As this period advanced more attention was given, but

Digitized by Google

yet not enough to give a solution to the great controversy as to the best form of tropical churches, *i. e.* between what we may call the idea of a Cavern, thick walls and small openings, and the Open style, spacious windows and wide open doors. The former is really more nearly indigenous, and characterizes the churches of Spanish America; the latter became the favourite in the British West Indies. The large church of St. John's, Antigua, costing some £40,000, is in the Italian style, and might stand in Bath or Cheltenham; the parish churches of Barbados—all rebuilt after the hurricane except one—were of the style of stone churches built in English towns about that same period, with round-topped windows, and galleries, but the provision for openings in the windows was much more liberal. Perhaps the finest church built in this period was that of St. George, Basseterre, St. Kitts. It was erected under the rectorship of Jermyn, afterwards Primus Bishop of the Scottish Church, and its design was commended by Beresford Hope in the *Art Journal.* The Altars were Communion-tables covered with red cloth, placed in a carpeted sanctuary, within a heavy rail of dark native wood. Fonts were provided in most churches, and Bishop Coleridge always required that they should be properly placed at the West end.

In Church Music this Bishop, as previously intimated, was unwearied in pressing for Congregational singing, although only within the narrow limits of Psalmody, *i. e.* Metrical versions of the Psalms. No chanting and no Hymns seem to have been ventured upon for some time.

(4) *Lay Help.*—The active participation of the laity of the upper class in the pastoral work of the Church was not abundant. They attended to Church business in the Legislatures and the Vestries, and acted as Churchwardens. But it would have been too much of a novelty for them to come forward actively in

Digitized by Google

purely spiritual matters. And those of them who succeeded in securing competences retired, too often, to England just when their days of leisure commenced. In fact, the assistance was rather in the opposite direction; instead of the laity taking over work from the clergy, the latter were called upon to discharge what were really duties of the laity. Bishop Coleridge advised his clergy in that time of transition that they would do well not to limit themselves too closely to pastoral duties, but to accept such offices as Magistrates, Inspectors of Prisons, and even Road Commissioners.

That great source of Christian influence, the work of Women in visiting the poorer classes, is never easy in tropical countries, and in the West Indies there was a long continuance of shrinking from it on the part of the feminine mind, due to the persistence of low morality already mentioned, and confirmed by the rudimentary character of the sanitary condition of the "cabins." So that for this beneficent agency the Church could only wait and hope.

(5) *Education.*—From the time of the arrival of the Bishops the fostering of Education was made a prominent part of the pastoral office. The Bishops left England at a time when Churchmen were awaking to the necessity of improving education. It was in 1810 that the Bishop of Norwich had declared at St. Paul's that "nearly two-thirds of the children of the labouring poor in this kingdom had little or no education." The Quaker Lancaster had founded the "British and Foreign School Society," on undenominational lines, a forestalling of the Church which was represented in a contemporary caricature showing the Bishops asleep with Lancaster surveying them with contempt. But their sleep was not for long; in 1811 "The National Society for the Education of the Children of the Poor in the principles of the Established Church," was

Digitized by Google

founded, with Joshua Watson and Dr. Bell as prime movers.

And Sunday Schools were rapidly springing up in connection with every parish church in the land. All this had been going on whilst Bishops Coleridge and Lipscombe were young clergy, and they carried the impulse of it across the Atlantic. "The parochial school," said Bishop Coleridge to his candidates for Holy Orders, "should be among the most cherished objects of ministerial care; every hour which a minister spends in the parochial school is a day gained for his after-ministry." At the outset the school work was by no means confined to children; the Sunday Schools and the Night Schools were largely resorted to by grown-up Negroes. To this day the effect of this is seen in the attendance of a considerable number of people at the Sunday Schools all their lives. The Bishop's wish was to see a School on every Estate, and he enjoined his clergy to visit every day in one or other of such schools as lay within their cure. The Nonconformists also opened schools, and the Mico Institution in Jamaica for training teachers was set up, assisted by the British and Foreign School Society. A Government Commission found in 1837 that in Jamaica there were 12,000 in the day schools, 5000 in evening schools, 20,000 in Sunday schools, and 4000 in private schools. There was also a good deal of informal teaching besides. Gardner narrates the interesting fact that grown-up people resorted for instruction in the evening to clever boys of the higher-grade Woolmer Schools to such an extent as to render such boys able to earn their own living. The distribution of the Jamaica Schools in 1841 was 62 Church, 61 Baptist, 25 Wesleyan Methodist, 16 London Missionary, and 22 Mico Charity. In Barbados they were nearly all Church Schools.

As time went on the Local Legislatures began to

Digitized by Google

take more cognizance of education, just as the Imperial Parliament was doing at home. In 1845 an Education Grant was made in Barbados ("to the order of the Bishop"). And in both Barbados and Jamaica, Education Boards were constituted by Government.

But the real progress of education proved a more arduous and complicated matter than had been expected. At the outset there was a glow of enthusiasm on the part of the enfranchised labouring class. But it died down to a depressing extent. Schomburgk found in Barbados in 1848, that parents no longer showed any strong desire for the education of their children. Principal Rawle, in 1847, found that the condition of education had already become "deplorable"; the long-established day school of the Codrington Estates had only a few children in attendance, and the master was irregular in his duty; most of the Sunday Schools in the island had expired; day schools were under teachers who were untrained and apathetic, and he could hear of only one really good school in the island (St. Paul's). Various causes were assigned. In Jamaica the people had very largely scattered from the estate barracks to cabins on squattings. But deeper down than this lay the disappointment of some foolish but very natural expectations on the part of the simple Negroes. They had been inclined to suppose that ability to read and write would lead to immunity from agricultural labour, and even, as Mr. Hodder puts it (*Conquests of the Cross*, part xxi.), they had "hoped to find great material benefits from painting billhooks and multiplying fabulous sums of money!" Thus it was that so late as 1866, of the 286 schools in Jamaica only one was returned as in the first class, and 190 were "failures."

(6) *Benevolent Institutions.*—The organization of charitable and benevolent institutions was slow, but it

Digitized by Google

was commenced; and the Church was to the front throughout. Even before Emancipation the zealous rector of St. John's, Antigua (Mr. Holberton), had instituted both Friendly and Temperance Societies, and the lists given by Bishop Coleridge in 1834 are most honourable to the Church at so critical and exacting a period. In Barbados he reports that there were a Daily-Meal Society for poor school children, a Medical Dispensary, an Asylum for Aged Poor, and four Friendly Societies, all established or remodelled since his arrival. In Antigua there were two Daily-Meal Societies, two Education Societies, by which many children were clothed, and eleven Friendly Societies (with 1599 members). There was a Friendly Society in Montserrat, a Clothing Society for school children in St. Kitts, a Poor Clothing Society in Trinidad, and four Friendly Societies in Guiana (1637 members). Starting from these progress was continuous. The Medical Dispensary of Barbados grew into a Hospital supported by subscriptions and aided with a Government grant, with the Bishop as an ex-officio Trustee, and the rector of St. Michael as Chaplain; a hospital which won high commendation from Dr. Davy. A Lunatic Asylum followed and a Lazaretto, chiefly through the exertions of the incumbent of St. Paul's, Bridgetown, and in 1839 we find the Bishop urging the establishment of Lazarettoes in every county of Guiana. Later we find Archdeacon Campbell in Jamaica instituting a Reformatory for Boys, which the Presbyterians followed up with one for Girls, both of them ultimately taken over by the Government, but originated under religious motives.

The fostering of the virtue of Industry was a constant subject of pastoral advice. None knew so well as the clergy the prime necessity of industrious habits if the cause of religion was to prosper. It is never from the ranks of loungers and the thriftless that

Digitized by Google

zealous Christians are drawn, except through the gateway of repentance and reformation. The whole influence of the Church was on the side of the settlement of the enfranchised Negroes as steady, industrious workers, whether as wage-earners, or as peasant cultivators, or as artisans. And it cannot be questioned that the weight of the whole strength of the Christian denominations had great influence in effecting the transition from the toil of the whip-driven slaves to the labour of the free Negroes, throughout the West Indies. It is common to find charges brought against the Negro of incurable indolence and incapability of self-direction in this respect. The charge is often based on ignorance, or on some sinister interest in causing this to be believed. Allow for the circumstances of climate, of race-character, and the fewness of pressing physical needs, and the Negro comes out not wholly without credit. In these Eight-hours days he ought to have the sympathy of the Labour class in England for having to some extent shortened the day's task from the situation imposed by slavery, when from dawn to sunset his whole frame was taxed with onerous and exhausting toils. The Jamaica managers were not wise, as is now universally agreed, in their treatment of the free Negroes. In Barbados and Antigua there was no corresponding difficulty. The Governor of Barbados, Sir Lionel Smith, an enlightened and sympathetic ruler, took statesmanlike steps on emancipation. He instituted a Committee of three Planters to decide as to what would be a fair day's work and a fair day's wage. Their decision was accepted, and on that basis the industrial revolution settled down in that Colony. In the larger Colonies where there were large areas of land practically unoccupied because not adapted for Sugar cultivation, the Negroes "squatted" numerously, as peasant cultivators, and the Estate-labour has been provided for

Digitized by Google

from other sources, chiefly by the Coolie system. But even so it is not indolence that is the cause of the Negro's declining Estate-work, but a preference for another form of life, more independent. This is not exactly a religious question; but it is so in one sense. Churchmen are sometimes bidden to moderate their rejoicing in Emancipation and the new era that ensued, by reference to this very departure of the Negroes from the employment they had hitherto followed, and the supposed consequence that the industrial system of the Colonies was ruined by their indolence. Whereas we see that it was not work in itself that was refused, even where it was refused—and it was accepted freely in some islands—but work under conditions that were not well-considered and therefore offered insufficient attraction in comparison with that lying open in other directions. No decline of the Sugar industry can be cited as a proof, or a consequence, of indolence on the part of the Negro race.

During this period, amidst all the efforts made for the Negroes, the Church in the West Indies began already to gather itself together for the extension of the Kingdom of Christ in other directions. Auxiliary branches were formed of the Missionary Societies which had proved so helpful to themselves, the S.P.G., the S.P.C.K. and the Bible Society. The contributions sent up to these Societies were never large, but from the circumstances they were significant.

The acceptance of the Missionary Character of every branch of the Church which is to be a living branch took most notable form in an independent enterprise of their own. Under the impulse of Principal Rawle there was founded in 1851 a Mission to the West of Africa, on the part of the Church in the West Indies. The region of the Pongo River was selected, and the "Pongas Mission" has been in operation ever since that time, with a varied

Digitized by Google

record of difficulty and success. A connected history is given in Chapter VIII.

In Guiana the Missionary opportunity lay nearer home. The hinterland of that Colony contained some tribes of Aboriginal Indians, and no time was lost in including them within the scope of the Church's care, or, at least, of commencing efforts to do so. Of this too a separate account is given in Chapter VIII. Still another door was opened to Missionary work among heathen people, when the Coolie system was set on foot, and thousands of Hindu labourers were brought into the West Indian Colonies to work upon the Plantations.

But it was some little time before anything could be begun for them. In 1861 neither Church nor State had moved in their interest, in religion, although the Bishop and his clergy were turning over in their minds plans for their instruction. The shade of Disestablishment was already over the State, insomuch that although Christianity in Guiana was established in a threefold way, as has been said, Dr. Underhill, the Baptist Missionary visitor, laments that there was careful provision on the part of the State for everything but religion on the part of the Trinidad Government. But it was of course really not to be expected that the Government would pay Missionaries, or even provide Chaplains for people who presumably had religion of their own. Here as in India evangelization must be within the province of voluntary effort. The Church would have moved earlier had it been stronger and more mature itself. As it was, the Presbyterians of Nova Scotia had their attention drawn to the Trinidad Coolies, and sent out some Missionaries who opened chapels and schools. Since the period covered by this chapter we have been able to make a commencement. For an account of it, see Chapter VIII.

Digitized by Google

THE CHURCH IN THE COLONIES ACQUIRED SINCE 1763.

Except for the two paragraphs just given, we have hitherto had in our view only the older of our West Indian Colonies, those settled wholly by British enterprise, or at least with an ingredient of a foreign element so small as to be a negligible quantity now. But the great wars with France in the 18th century enlarged the dominion of Great Britain by several islands settled principally by Frenchmen, namely, St. Vincent, Grenada, St. Lucia and Dominica, with one acquired from Spain, Trinidad, and with the three Colonies of South American rivers, Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice, acquired from the Dutch and united under the designation British Guiana. Of these St. Vincent and Grenada were substantially occupied by French enterprise. The others were all only in an initial stage of settlement. St. Vincent was acquired by us somewhat earlier than the others—and indeed had been regarded as "neutral" at an earlier date—and it became fairly Anglicized; but as to the others, the traveller is at once aware that he is not wholly in an English atmosphere; the patois is that of France or Spain, and the Negro peasantry of Grenada and St. Lucia and Trinidad have a certain bearing and air which renders them more akin to their brethren in Martinique than to those in Barbados. In Trinidad there are marks of the original Spanish element, as well as of the engrafted French, and in Guiana, of course, of the Dutch.

Amongst the features which thus mark these Colonies there stands out their adherence to the Church of Rome, supreme as she had been in all of them until their conquest or cession. What was to be done?

It is a grave and difficult question that is raised

Digitized by Google

when we ask how far does *dispossession* extend when the sovereignty of a territory is transferred? In particular, does dispossession involve the displacement of the established Religion? When Christendom was single, an exchange of sovereignty was a simple matter, and raised no difficulty in this respect: for example, when Brittany was transferred to France, or when Wales became united to England. There was only one Christian Church and no ecclesiastical question arose. But when Protestantism brought up the principle of autonomous national branches of the Catholic Church, Christendom remained a union, but it was no longer a unity. What then should take place in the case of a province or an island passing from one State to another? Would the allegiance of the inhabitants now be due to the Established Church of the new State? Or could a separation be made and the ecclesiastical allegiance be left unchanged while the transfer of allegiance in matters secular was imperative? The Nationality principle did not work out very clearly in spiritual things; national boundaries are subject to changes, and the inhabitants of provinces must accept the fortunes of war in this respect with the best grace they can; but conscience and religious convictions could not thus be made to depend upon battles and treaties. The sacredness of religion was itself at stake. Thus the question was raised from the point of view of Religion.

But the State had also to ask the question from its own point of view—what functions of public life was it to assume to be included in the transfer of sovereign rights? If a State extends its territorial dominion, does it thereby extend the sphere of the religion which it holds to be "established" within itself? and if so, does it expect the inhabitants of the acquired territory forthwith to conform? When British dominion was extended to the Atlantic coast

Digitized by Google

of North America there was in general the assumption that the Established Church was extended too. To the Charter under which the Colony of Virginia was founded there was attached a Royal ordinance as follows :—

"That the said president, councils, and the ministers, should provide that the Word and Service of God be preached, planted and used not only in the said Colonies, but also, as much as might be, among the savages bordering among them, according to the rites and doctrines of the Church of England."

Even in the Maryland Charter it was not different ; the Toleration clauses under which the Romanist character of that Colony grew up were added later on. Even in the first Colony in Massachusetts, and in Maine, the Charters supposed that the Christian Faith would be pursued in accordance with the Laws of England, and it was only by disregarding the Charters that other forms of worship and discipline were adopted by the colonists there. Later on, indeed, a difference appeared : in the Quaker Colony of Pennsylvania freedom was given, and it was the Established Church which was to be "tolerated." Now that Great Britain had acquired territory by conquest what was to be the procedure?[1]

The difficulty is most acute not in a new country or a country occupied only by heathen nations, but when a country with one Branch of the Church established in it conquers a country, or province, in which another branch is established. This was the case with Grenada, Trinidad, and the other recent conquests.

[1] It is here pertinent to observe that there is a distinct advantage in the Chartered Company System in this respect. The question can at least be evaded when a Charter is issued : as it was throughout the history of the East India Company, which consequently never became involved in any religious responsibility.

Digitized by Google

The position taken up was a thoroughly English one, one of compromise. The Established Church of England and Ireland was assumed to be the established church of the conquered Colonies, the other church was no longer established, no longer the State church. At the same time there was no intention of officially inviting, to say nothing of pressing, the inhabitants to transfer themselves individually. Nor were the clergy of the now disestablished Romanist branch to be in any way discouraged or interfered with. The Articles of Capitulation of Trinidad, agreed upon between the Government of Spain in surrendering the island, and the British Government in taking it over, were quite explicit in providing for the toleration of religious beliefs, while yet the English Establishment was to come into force as part of English rule.

This was the view taken by Bishop Coleridge when he turned his attention to the Trinidad portion of his diocese. His Letters Patent from the Crown of Great Britain told him that Trinidad came under his jurisdiction as a Bishop of the Established Church, and he took it that the Church of England was the State Church of the new Colony, and the only State Church. "With the exception of the Scottish," he says, "there is only one Established Church throughout the whole British Empire. The State is bound to support the Church: to others it may, under certain limitations, grant its aid. The Bishop is the only legal Bishop in Trinidad as elsewhere in his diocese." But Bishop Coleridge was no Erastian, he knew that the Roman Church was a branch of the Church Catholic, and he regarded it as on a different footing from the bodies of people who had separated themselves from the Church of England. The Roman Church was in no sense a schism in Trinidad. Yet he held that every inhabitant had a right, a legal right, to the minis-

Digitized by Google

trations of the Church of England clergy if he desired to exercise it, and he enjoined upon his clergy that they should consider themselves the pastors of the inhabitants of the whole island.

The working out of the situation is instructive. What would have happened had it been the Spanish Monarchy or the French under Louis XIV. which had thus acquired Colonies we cannot say; to Britain it was granted to retain her Colonies intact. In our Colonies there was no pressure of the strict legal position, and as at home we had in 1829 granted to Romanists emancipation in the sense of full political rights, so in these Colonies no disabilities arose from the fact that the bulk of the inhabitants remained outside the State Church. In Trinidad the Governor as representative of the Crown was officially a member of the Church of England. The Bishop and Clergy were officially the ministers of religion, and whenever the State required religious duty it was according to the order of that Church, just as in our Universities now; whatever religious instruction is officially given, and whatever religious ceremonies are officially observed, they are according to the order of the Established Church. But what was the Governor to do in the case of certain official duties in the Roman Church hitherto exercised by the Spanish Governors? Officially he had taken those duties over, but his conception of the essentially Protestant character of the Crown of Great Britain might prevent his accepting them, or his own conscience might intervene. Some Governors, in fact, took one view, some the other. The estimable Sir Ralph Woodford, benefactor as he was to the Church of England, and founder of Holy Trinity Church, now the Cathedral of Port of Spain, exercised the old functions of the Governor as "Patron" of the Roman Church in Trinidad: nay he took active steps in that office, and

Digitized by Google

moved the authorities at Rome to appoint a Bishop to the island, which was done: a Bishop *in partibus* was appointed as Vicar-General for the British West Indies with his seat at Port of Spain. But a successor, Sir Henry Macleod (1840), declined to act in this way. He went far in the opposite direction, and caused an "Ordinance" to be enacted (1844) to the effect that "all the laws, ordinances, and canons ecclesiastical which are now used and enforced in England shall be accepted, esteemed and taken to be in full force and virtue within the island." And two of his successors followed the same course. Under this *régime* the Romanist inhabitants were much dissatisfied, and a distinct cleavage between them and the English residents set in, extending even to social life, so long as it lasted. But in sympathy with the movement towards disestablishment at home, which was fast setting in, Governor Manners Sutton, 1864, took a different line, and the Hon. Arthur Gordon (afterwards Sir Arthur, and now Lord Stanmore) went out in 1886 with instructions to carry out a policy of disestablishment. In this he was supported by the Romanists.

The question of Endowment was different. The Romanists themselves, for instance Dr. de Verteuil, the historian of Trinidad, explicitly separated it from that of Establishment. It was possible for the Government to assist all approved bodies with funds, and this was done. The principle of Concurrent Endowment was in operation long before disestablishment took place, and continued long after it, even to this day in some of the Colonies. But two sects stood out against even this connection with the State, the Baptists and the Independents: these declined all proffered grants. But the Methodists and Moravians had no scruple against joining with the Anglicans and Romanists in accepting them.

Digitized by Google

The cause of Education in the conquered islands was somewhat easier to deal with, although a difficulty arose from another source. It was not so much a peculiar function of the Established Church as to lead a Government to think it necessary to confine grants and official countenance to the schools connected with that Church. And it was easier to allot grants by separating the secular side of the School-work from the religious, and allotting the grants specifically to the former.

In Trinidad undenominational schools were the first to be attempted, the Lady Mico Trust making the endeavour. But in a country predominantly Romanist they could not succeed, nor did they do so. The Anglican and Roman Churches both began quietly to work out School development; and Government aid was granted to both according to their needs. The main difficulty was to secure competent teachers, and for a long time the schools were far from being efficient, even on a low standard of judgment. When Lord Harris became Governor, 1846, a general scheme was sketched out. There was to be a Government Board of Education, an Inspector, a training college, and a system of public elementary schools providing for every "ward" in the island. Two points in this scheme are noticeable: they show how in a Crown Colony a "despotism" can be attempted, how a Governor may go out and endeavour to impose upon a community a system embodying ideas beyond what is locally acceptable, and indeed beyond what the Parliament and Government of the day could carry out at home. Governor Lord Harris's scheme provided for all education being free, which was some forty years in advance of England; for a regular system of evening schools, which was also in advance, and for all being secular, another change. Upon this last rock the scheme was wrecked, and deservedly,

Digitized by Google

enacting as it did that no minister of religion should be allowed entrance to the schools. It never really went beyond the first stage or two, and when Sir Arthur Gordon went out nearly twenty years afterwards, advocate of religious equality as he was, he saw that religious equality and the State insistence on secularity of popular education were by no means the same thing. He therefore accepted the teaching of experience, and made some allowance to the Denominational System. But even so, things halted, and when he left the Colony in 1870 there were only thirty primary schools in the Colony. In 1875 Sir Henry Turner Irving renounced dictation by officialism on a matter touching the conscience of a community, and he issued an Ordinance allowing free play to Denominational Schools pure and simple, with ample State aid. The general opinion is that this system is making progress. The thirty schools of 1875 had become 108 by 1886; fifty Government and fifty-eight Denominational, with 3800 and 5100 children respectively. In this contest for principle the Anglican authorities worked in harmony with the Roman in insisting upon the right of religious bodies to open schools and to receive State aid for the secular portion of their work.

In higher education the experience was similar, except that the Anglican part of the community was too small to organize itself separately against the Government secular schools, as the Romanists did. Governor Keate established a School or College, on the plan of the Queen's Colleges in Ireland, but it did little. Sir Arthur Gordon in 1870 changed it into a "Royal College of Trinidad" (a school it was, not a university college): to this other schools, Denominational, for example, might be affiliated, their scholars being reckoned as scholars of the Royal College, and their teachers paid as on the staff. In

Digitized by Google

1880 the secular branch of the College had eighty scholars, the Romanist branch, "the College of the Immaculate Conception," 142 (boys), and the Convent School, 110. In 1886 the Convent School —unique in the British West Indies as a boarding-school for the higher education of girls — had withdrawn from connection with the Royal College, and stood on its own basis; the College of the Conception had 167 boys, and the Government College sixty.

THE OTHER CONQUERED COLONIES.

In these a similar situation was worked out. In St. Vincent, acquired 1763, the English element was stronger in proportion to the French: the common law of England was the basis of the legal system, and a Representative Chamber was set up. The Church of England was, therefore, effectively established throughout the island, and her schools shared with those of other bodies the work of education. The Church had about one-half of the people, the Wesleyans being strongest among the other half.

In Grenada, 1763, the French element predominated, but here also English law came into force, and a representative body was set up; the Church was established, and the school was denominational.

Tobago, which had long been regarded as neutral, as between French, Spanish, and British, became ours in 1763, and its constitution was on similar lines to the above.

St. Lucia, however, was longer in French hands. It was the "Gibraltar of the Gulf of Mexico" (General Nogués to Bonaparte), and the seat of repeated contests in the Great War, and is associated with the illustrious names of Rodney, Abercrombie, and Sir John Moore. It has been ours only since

Digitized by Google

1813. Its legal system and social order are French, and the great majority of the people Roman Catholics (35,000 out of 38,000). Since our occupation there has been in no practical sense any Established Church; no "parishes" or "clergy"; but grants for stipends were paid both to our "chaplains" and the Roman curés. The fact that the majority of the British who have been attracted to this Colony were Scotch, has accounted for this. In educational matters the schools were undenominational, under the Mico Trust: the Roman Church was slow in setting any up, it appears.

Dominica is very similar in its history to St. Lucia. In each of these a single clergyman officiated as a chaplain in a single church; and with a couple of schools, represented the Church of England here in 1841.

British Guiana, however, presents new features. Here we took over a fringe of Dutch settlements in 1798, along the coast of the region from near the Orinoco to the Corentyn Rivers: the Articles of Capitulation provided that the prevalent Roman-Dutch law should still be in force in civil cases, but the British law in criminal. There was continued a representative body of complicated constitution, and with powers about which there has been constant dispute. The Established Church was the Dutch Reformed Church, or rather it should be said that if there had been any Church at all it would have been that. The actual condition of religion in the Colony when we took it over is thus described by Dr. Pinckard in 1806:

"A total neglect of religious observances prevails in these Colonies" (they were still three separate Colonies). "No church or temple is to be found in the settlements, nor have the inhabitants even availed themselves of the facilities of their religious rites

Digitized by Google

(Calvinism) so far as to appoint any house or other building for the performance of divine service. Neglecting their own duties to the Deity, they have used no means to inculcate a sense of religious awe or of moral conviction among the slaves, but have confided the government of these poor degraded beings solely to terror, and the whip. Sunday, it is true, has been set apart as a day of rest, but no solemn ceremony marks it as the Sabbath. Idleness and merriment only distinguish it from the other days of the week. No part of it is devoted to religious and moral improvement: not one hour is appointed for the instruction of the negroes in the duties we all owe to the Creator, or to teach the principles which ought to govern the conduct of man to man."

One Governor took a chaplain out with him. Failing any religious edifice, public service was appointed on his first Sunday in the public square at Georgetown; the Governor and Chaplain proceeded there at the hour fixed, but no one else appeared, and the service was adjourned.

As things settled down there was not much opening, but the Government were serious, and desired that State countenance should be afforded to religion. As, however, it appeared that a large number of the new immigrants were Scotch, it seemed inexpedient to press the Church of England on the Colony, and the curious step was taken, in 1824, of establishing simultaneously three Protestant Churches—the Anglican, the Scotch Presbyterian, and the Reformed Dutch; the State taking upon itself a liberal endowment for all three. Soon after the formation of the (Anglican) diocese of Guiana, 1842, the perplexed Government of Guiana took another remarkable step, they divided the now united Colony into parishes, and allotted some of these to the Church of England, some to the Scotch—the Dutch seem to have been squeezed

Digitized by Google

out in the arrangement—the former receiving ten, the latter eight. Each Church might have congregations and schools in other parishes than its own, but as the parish boundary was crossed a member of the Established Church suddenly became a Nonconformist! Of all compromises this seems one of the crudest ever adopted in affairs ecclesiastical; but it served its purpose until the time for separating the idea of establishment from that of endowment. Education so far as it went was denominational. That there was progress is seen in the figures for clergy, churches, and schools: 1834, 10, 11, 15; 1841, 23, 48, 33; 1870, clergy, 33.

A few words as to the Bahamas and Honduras before our account of this period closes.

The Bahamas.—These islands, hundreds in number, of which about twenty are inhabited, lie scattered along 600 miles of sea, separated by rocky channels, and subject to frequent storms. Their nearness to the American coast has led to their lying out of the current of West Indian interests; a separation increased by the fact of their being also half outside the tropics, and so not under the same climatic and geographical circumstances, and their total population in 1784 was only 4000, and is not, even now, 50,000. Their early European occupants were men of privateering habits, and buccaneers, and of various nations. Since 1646 we had a settlement there, offshoots from Bermuda and Carolina; but the chief town in New Providence was annihilated by the French and Spaniards, and for a time the place was simply a pirates' den. An ex-buccaneer was employed in the reign of George I. to put down the disorderly elements, which he accomplished sufficiently to cause the place to be regarded from that time as a regular "colony"; but much of the trade continued to be contraband, and wrecking was no small part of the

Digitized by Google

source of what prosperity was enjoyed. Of late years "salt-raking," the cultivation of an aloe for the fibres of its leaves, and the search for sponges, have been the chief occupations. The religious history of a community—or group of small communities—like this is not likely to be marked by any original features. During last century there was not always any clergyman resident at all. Governor Tinker made his secretary, Mr. J. Snow, "read Prayers and a sermon every Sunday in the Town House," and it is pleasant to observe several Governors successively anxious to have the ministrations of the Church provided for. Similarly a Magistrate on Eleuthera Island read Prayers and service on Sundays. It fell to the S.P.G. to endeavour to maintain a succession of Missionaries, and we find one report of people influenced in default of a Missionary by his widow. It was said in 1778 that all the inhabitants of two larger islands (1391 in number) professed to be members of the Church, and that there were no Dissenters there at all. The Government began to grant clergy stipends; and later the Society prevailed on the Assembly to establish a fund for churches, parsonages, and schools, about the year 1800. For some years the island Government bore the charges alone, as the S.P.G. seems to have stayed its help until it established the Negro Education Fund after Emancipation. The Colonial and Continental Society also came to the help of this group. The Presbyterians had some churches which were placed on the Government list as quasi-established. And they were not overlooked by the Wesleyans, as in 1794 they were brought to view by Dr. Coke and a friend; the work was continuous, and the islands became a District in which several men laboured whose names are highly honoured in Methodist history. Church work was placed on a new footing in 1861, when they were constituted

Digitized by Google

a diocese, and Dr. Caulfield went there as the first Bishop. Not spared for even a year's episcopate, he was succeeded by a very fine example of the Colonial Bishop, Addington Venables. Grandson of a Prime Minister, educated at Eton and Oxford and Wells (under Mr. Pinder), and with some private fortune, he spent himself and was spent in this remote diocese, dying at an early age. When he arrived, 1861, it was a time of inflated prosperity (1861), as the War of Secession in America rendered these islands convenient for some mercantile purposes. But an artificial prosperity of this kind is of little value; with Peace it collapsed, and people were in no chastened mood. Bishop Venables therefore claimed at a Lambeth Conference that he was the Bishop of the poorest diocese of our Church: and no one seems to have disputed his claim.

British Honduras.—The cutting of mahogany on the coast of Central America led to our claiming from Spain a right to have some settlement on that shore, which was allowed in the Peace of Utrecht. After a final attempt to oust us the Spaniards gave way in 1795, and from that date a "colony" with some official organization began. It was placed under Jamaica until 1884, when it became separate. The population consisted of the British wood-cutters and merchants and their slaves, who got on very well together and fought side by side against the Spaniards. In 1808 the numbers were 200 (mainly Scotch) and 3000 respectively. They set up a Chaplain, church, and a clerk, from the public revenues, the latter frequently burying the black people and discharging other offices in the absence of the Chaplain. But the successive chaplains were not always diligent, and the Negroes were left too much alone, until the diocese of Jamaica was formed and Belize brought under it. But Wesleyan and Baptist Missionaries went out and were able to make a way,

Digitized by Google

independently of State aid. They extended their operations to some Carib Indians and Spanish Indians, and were extensive enough to form another "District." The Baptists never got beyond Belize itself. We regret to find so late as 1847 a violent attempt on the part of the whites to hamper these Missionaries, which even went so far as passing a strong repressive enactment, to be promptly disannulled after petition to Home Government. As the local authorities at the same time placed a second Chaplain on the taxes, and built another church, and the slavery question was settled, there was evidently some strain which affected not religion but dissent. The issue of it was that the Dissenters went on as before, and the Church, increased in strength and resources, began to give some more attention to the black race. It is pleasant to note in an earlier period, in fact in the period succeeding Emancipation, the Government Superintendent, Colonel Fancourt, was zealous "in strengthening the weak hands of the Church" in the Colony, and the S.P.G. in several ways co-operated with him. There was no formal establishment of the Church here except the support of the Chaplains at Belize, the capital.

NOTE.—A Parliamentary paper gives the following summary of the numbers attending the ordinary services of the chief religious bodies in the British West Indies at the close of this period. It may be taken at a different estimate of its value by different readers, but at least it throws some light on comparative results.

Church of England	100,000	(Jamaica, 40,000).
Presbyterian	16,000	(Jamaica, 10,000; Guiana, 4000).
Roman Catholic	32,000	(Dominica, 10,000; Trinidad, 16,000; St. Lucia, 4000).
Wesleyan Methodist	95,000	well dispersed.
Baptist	53,000	(51,000 in Jamaica).
Moravian	26,000	(in Jamaica, Antigua, and Barbados).

The figures for the Roman Catholics must be wrong, even

Digitized by Google

supposing this table to be confined to grown-up people, as in fact it is. The Moravians are almost certainly considerably under the mark. But taken as it stands the figures show us a population of which forty years before the mass was in slavery and without instruction, now participating in Christian privileges, and themselves responsive to Christian influence. Suddenly emerging as they did from a tyrannous and depressing *régime*, quite other results than the above might easily be imagined, but the work was begun by ourselves just before they were freed, by the others for some generations before, and to this timely anticipation it seems impossible to attribute too much importance. That our Church was allowed to shake off the reproach of previous callousness, due to her want of life within herself and her having been so long choked by the Erastian form of her connection with the State during most of the 18th century, is evident. She was already, in forty years' time, the leading religious body in these Colonies, and even among the Negroes themselves held an honourable and promising position.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI

DISESTABLISHMENT AND DISENDOWMENT

The movement in general—Application to W. Indies—Ordered from Great Britain—Cessation of Imperial support of Bishoprics—Disestablishment Act in Jamaica, 1870—In other Islands—Concurrent Endowment in Trinidad and Guiana—Re-establishment in Barbados—Effects of Disestablishment—Of Disendowment.

FOR thirty years after Emancipation the work of the Church of England in the West Indies was carried on under the old conditions as regards relations with the State. In the older Colonies she was fully established by the laws of the Colonies, and in conjunction with the legal establishment at home. In the conquered Colonies she was established in Trinidad, St. Vincent and Grenada, and shared establishment with the Presbyterian and Dutch Reformed Churches in Guiana, but was not established in the others. In nearly all of them she shared Government grants in aid of her work with the Romanists and the leading English Protestant denominations. To every denomination and to every individual there was now perfect freedom of religious opinion.

But as we approach the year 1870 we see a gradual accumulation of influences drawing men's minds away from the support of the official connection of the State with the Church. The movement grew rapidly within

Digitized by Google

the decade 1860—1870, and it became associated with a principle of government which for years had been gathering in force, namely, the rule of the Majority. This was applied to primary principles, without restriction or limit, leaving the working of the Executive Government as the field for talents and training. Whenever, therefore, a State Church was in a minority, its situation became precarious, even in the minds of many who would have supported the connection had it been favoured by a majority. This is no place for arguing the question, for it was in the larger arena of Imperial politics, not within the circle of local West Indian politics, that it was decided.

Three events will always be landmarks of the movement, two of them occurring in Colonial affairs. (1) The removal of the British Crown from being necessarily connected in the Colonies with the establishment of the Anglican Church, when the Clergy Reserves of Canada were handed over to the Local Legislatures to be dealt with at will (1853). (2) The withdrawal of the Crown from the appointment of Bishops after the stormy Colenso controversy. In connection with this latter event the validity of "Letters Patent" in a Colony was discredited; royal "licences" were tried, but in 1867 the Crown was advised to renounce all share in the appointment of Bishops. In a despatch to the Governor of Jamaica in 1870 the Colonial Secretary stated that no more Letters Patent would be issued.[1] The dissolution of

[1] The Bishops of any Province in the Colonies or abroad may meet and consecrate a new Bishop without any Crown authority. But if it is desired that the Archbishop of Canterbury or any English Bishop should officiate, he has to act as still connected with the State. The following is the Royal Licence or Mandate as issued at the latest consecration of a West Indian Bishop.

"Victoria, by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith; To the most Reverend Father in God, Frederick, by Divine Pro-

Digitized by Google

connection with the Bishops extends to the Colonial clergy, who are now appointed and regulated without any intervention of the Crown. And (3) the disestablishment of the Church of Ireland in 1869, largely by means of the "minority" argument, after the admission of a large number of new voters to the electorate after the Reform Bill of 1867.

The application of this movement, in alliance with the minority consideration, to the West Indies soon took place. Statistics were collected which showed that the Established Church, even if not in a minority in every separate Colony, was so in most, and decidedly so over the whole area; possibly it included about one-third of the whole of the population, as appears by the table on p. 132. It should be borne in mind that this minority was partly due here, as in other Colonies, to the fact that England is not Great Britain and Ireland, and that colonists came from

---

vidence Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, and Metropolitan, Greeting :—

"Whereas you the said Archbishop have humbly applied to us for Our Licence by Warrant under our Sign Manual and Signet, authorizing and empowering you to Consecrate Our Trusty and Well-beloved the Very Reverend Herbert Mather, Doctor of Divinity, Clerk in Holy Orders, Provost of Inverness Cathedral, to be a Bishop, to the intent that he should exercise his functions in one of our possessions abroad. Now it is Our Will and Pleasure, and We do by this Our Licence under Our Sign Manual and Signet authorize and empower you the said Archbishop to Consecrate the said Herbert Mather to be a Bishop, and We do further authorize and empower you to do, perform, and execute all and singular those things which belong to your pastoral office in respect of such Consecration as aforesaid, according to the Laws, Statutes, and Canons in this behalf made and provided.

"Given at our Court at Saint James's this Tenth day of July, one thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven in the sixty-first year of Our Reign.

"By Her Majesty's Command,

"(*Signed*) J. CHAMBERLAIN."

Digitized by Google

Scotland in greater proportion than that of the population of Scotland to the population of England; perhaps in the West Indies the same could not be said of the Irish or Welsh. And a contemporary return to the S.P.G. for Jamaica showed an average attendance at Church of about 36,000, at Chapels of 92,000.

Parliament was not itself directly called upon to take the question in hand for the West Indies. The Cabinet of the day decided to open it, but as they had the confidence of Parliament it must be taken that they carried out a policy which Parliament, however silently, approved and supported. The Colonial Secretary (Cardwell) began to instruct outgoing Governors as to what was to be the tendency of their action. Sir J. Patrick Grant, for example, went out to Jamaica in 1866 so instructed, and began by insisting that Church Expenses—*i. e.* the ordinary expenses of Public Worship—should no longer be defrayed from the Vestry rates. No vital change was here, and the Bishop is quoted as having accepted, even as having suggested, the measure. But on scrutiny it appears that what was in the Bishop's mind was the paramount necessity then existing in the island for retrenchment in every direction as insisted upon by Sir Henry Stork's Commission after the Eyre disturbances. And he rather acquiesced than approved; and even so, he hoped that one-half of the money so saved would still be retained for the Church for other purposes, which was not done.

The case of the West Indies was brought before Parliament in 1868 in a subordinate and confused way, namely in connection with the Imperial Grant, first made by Canning when Bishops were sent out in 1824. It was £20,000 a year, and had been continued at that precise figure without regard to the increase in the number of Bishops and clergy. It is instructive

Digitized by Google

to notice that the withdrawal was proposed by a Conservative Ministry, in the premiership of Mr. Disraeli, the Duke of Buckingham, as Secretary of State for the Colonies, taking charge of the proposal in the House of Lords, and Sir Charles Adderley (now Lord Norton), as Under-Secretary, in the House of Commons. In the Lower House there seems to have been no discussion: it must have passed as unopposed Government business; but in the House of Lords there was. Lord Carnarvon, then an independent Conservative Peer—who had himself held the Colonial Secretaryship—criticized the withdrawal of the grant as being disendowment, and inconsistent as coming from the party then actually opposing proposals to disestablish the Irish Church. By the mouth of Lord Chancellor Cairns the Government endeavoured to remove the discussion from principle to mere financial expediency, alleging that it was only a temporary grant for a period of distress, the need for which had now passed away. Lord Carnarvon said it was a kind of right now, and Lord Granville agreed. But Lord Salisbury—then like Lord Carnarvon in secession from the Conservative Ministry—refused to accept Lord Carnarvon's point, and said that the grant was on a par with the Maynooth Grant to the Roman Catholics in Ireland and the *Regium Donum* to the Presbyterians, and was not in any sense property. The Duke of Buckingham said that he had assurances from the Colonies that the grant was no longer needed, and so the debate closed. The grant ceased, and whether Lord Carnarvon or the Government were right, with it ceased at the hands of a Conservative Ministry all direct responsibility on the part of the Imperial Government for the support of religion in the West Indies.

It remained now for the local Legislatures to be set in motion. The amount of local government

Digitized by Google

being less than in what are known as responsible Colonies—Canada, the Australasian Colonies, Cape Colony and Natal—the *rôle* of the Crown was not difficult. Even in Jamaica the pathway had been smoothed for Imperial action by the surrender of the rights of the old Legislature after the sad affair of Gordon and Governor Eyre. Governor Sir J. P. Grant therefore had nothing to do but to announce that as vacancies occurred in the Island rectories no further appointments would be made, or rather, that there would be no successors on the list of the Treasury. A local Act was recommended by him and passed, empowering members of the Church, as defined by Baptism and making a declaration, to meet and constitute themselves into a corporation, which would be self-governing and capable of holding property. The churches, the parsonages, and even the schools already in possession of the Church would be transferred to this new Body. This Act, "Law xxx. of 1870" of the Colony of Jamaica, authorized the Bishop to call a "Diocesan Synod" consisting of the Bishop, clergy and laity as thus defined: "All baptized laymen of twenty-one years of age, or upwards, subscribing to the declaration following, that is to say—

"We the undersigned baptized laymen, of twenty-one years of age, or upwards, of the communion of the Church of England in Jamaica, hereby express our willingness to contribute to the support and maintenance of that Church, and claim the right of voting as members of the congregation of [ ] for the election of one Lay Representative to the first Diocesan Synod." [Signatures or marks.] There was here, therefore, really no disendowment; it was, as Lord Salisbury said of the Imperial action, the withdrawal of a State grant. And the warmest advocate of Endowed Churches could not say that there was any sacrilegious confiscation. The Govern-

Digitized by Google

ment might be wise or it might be foolish in ceasing to give these grants, but it was in no sense touching "property" either ecclesiastical or other.

In Antigua a local disestablishment Act was passed which provided that all the rectories before being handed should be put into thorough repair at the Government charge. Of the other Leeward Islands, in Montserrat no disestablishment Act was ever passed; Governor Sir Benjamin Pine simply made a sort of rough-and-ready concurrent endowment; for St. Kitts, Nevis, and Dominica, a new body was incorporated in each island. The Bishop of Antigua was an ex-officio member of all these bodies. In St. Vincent the concurrent endowment system came to an abrupt end in 1888, by reason of the deepening financial distress. The Bishop reported to Windward Islands Synod III. that the three endowed rectors of the Colony had been compulsorily retired on pensions. (Three disendowed Wesleyan ministers were withdrawn from the island at the same time.)

In Trinidad concurrent endowment of religious bodies on a footing of legal equality replaced the old system of Crown action.

In Guiana the concurrent endowment system has not been interfered with by order from home, nor by local action. The Clergy List Ordinance has been renewed every five years, by which a certain number of Anglican incumbents and Presbyterian and Lutheran ministers receive stipends, while the authorities of the Roman and Wesleyan bodies receive block grants. When the renewal question came up in 1896, the depressed financial situation led to the renewal being only until 1898 (instead of for five years). There was a small amount of opinion in the Combined Court in favour of discontinuance (save for vested interests). A larger body of opinion was in favour of altering the plan of dealing with individual incumbents, and aiding

Digitized by Google

both our Church and the Presbyterians with block grants; but no change was made, except that the Bishop and Synod were recognized by a more full requirement of their approval of each incumbent; a very satisfactory alteration.

In the Bahamas both the Church of England and the Presbyterians were disendowed together in 1869. The reasons alleged in the preamble to the Act were need for economy in the Treasury, and the existence of other "denominations" besides these. The Act provided that two new bodies should be formed, one the Bishops, clergy and members of the Church of England, the other the Ministers and elders of the Presbyterian Community.

It has been doubted whether local feeling in the West Indies required the disestablishment and disendowment of the Church. The late Bishop Branch of Antigua—a West Indian born and educated—publicly stated in his first Charge that it was accomplished at "the peremptory dictation of the Colonial Office, without any local pressure from Dissenters," or from the local Legislatures.

The question in Antigua diocese seems, indeed, to have been one of religious equality, not of economy. A choice between concurrent endowment and disendowment was offered to Churchmen—the latter was accepted in preference. The time was one of industrial prosperity, and the Church authorities felt sanguine that they might now take their stand upon the voluntary system.

In Jamaica there seemed to be no local movement for the change. Face to face with the great task of evangelizing the enfranchised and ever-increasing Negro masses, even Dissenters were not eager to see new experiments tried at all. Still, the Colonial Secretary of the next Ministry (Mr. Gladstone's), Lord Kimberley, in a despatch to the Governor of

Digitized by Google

Jamaica, in 1870, said that he had received no protest from the Bishop and members of the Church of England against the Disendowment Act, and therefore he should advise the Crown to allow it. This is only an argument from silence, but it appears strong, although it may possibly have been through supineness in political action that no protest was sent. It was thought that if the Church had conferred with the Methodists, and taken common action, a certain amount of concurrent endowment might have been secured. But disestablishment as change of status was inevitable.

However, there was one Colony in which a very remarkable assertion of independence took place. The Colony of Barbados had not, like Jamaica, forfeited its Constitutional share in its own government. As a Colony it has always been accustomed to considerable independence of judgment. "Little England" is a designation not only given to it by its own inhabitants, but allowed to it by other West Indians. Commended, as it was, by Dr. Davy for such originative activity as the establishment of an Agricultural Society before any existed in England, save one—the Bath and West of England—its leaders in secular affairs have insisted on seeing things for themselves. They resisted with the greatest spirit the attempt made from home to enforce upon them Confederation with neighbouring islands, and in 1870 they resisted the acceptance of a policy of Disestablishment.

In this Colony the Church of England was in a peculiar position. The Royalist and Cavalier traditions had left a mark there; Dissenters had never secured any substantial following, the Moravians and Wesleyans excepted, and even of them the proportion to the Established Church was wholly different from the position they had secured in other Colonies. There was no Romanist element due to previous French or

Digitized by Google

Spanish occupation. A compact population had rendered comfortable terms between whites and blacks absolutely indispensable, and it had been secured. Hence the Church of the whites had never any animosity to encounter from the blacks, and when it began to extend its ministrations to them its success was rapid. Further, the island had been the residence of the statesmanlike and spiritual-minded Bishop Coleridge, and had been the focus of his liberal and sagacious zeal. His successor, Bishop Parry, was an able man well qualified for carrying on the same traditions. And within its limits was Codrington College; so that it had been specially influenced by the great Principals, Pinder and Rawle. All these things told, and nine-tenths of the Colony was within the fold of the Church of England, as by law established in it.

The Barbadians saw quite plainly that no conscientious scruples were being infringed by the establishment of the Church, and those who, as above indicated, supported disestablishment where the religion of a minority was privileged had no footing here. The Colony was not separately consulted, and it felt that it was being forced into the line of a general policy imposed upon neighbours in different circumstances and with less independence. The Barbadians therefore were disinclined to acquiesce. Another reason came prominently into their own minds which led them to further disinclination to yield to pressure from England. They saw that so long as there was endowment a hold was kept on the absentee proprietors, the revenue being derived to a considerable extent from a kind of land-tax. They knew well that if the cause of religion was thrown upon voluntary contributions, however generously the people might respond, and however handsomely a few absentee proprietors might co-operate, the bulk of the latter would contribute

Digitized by Google

nothing at all. It was, therefore, to the interest of residents that for the support of an institution which was confessedly endeavouring to do its duty to the labouring classes, and was indeed the centre of their higher interests, both spiritual and secular, even the absentee proprietors should in justice be compelled to contribute. And this the more, in that the deputies of these in many cases had incomes which left them little margin, while the amount of profits and rents annually remitted to England was a very large fraction of the whole island produce. As those residents who were not Church of England people were mostly Wesleyans or Moravians, the continuance to these denominations of grants in aid would meet all objections.

Accordingly, in 1872, the Barbados Legislature passed an Act re-establishing the Church. They placed the Bishop, with an Archdeacon and the Island Clergy, on an official list. They laid down certain conditions of appointment, tenure, and dismissal in connection with the payment of these stipends, and the enjoyment of the parsonages. The Parish Vestries were to continue to be responsible for the fabric of churches and parsonages, and the expenses of public worship; their accounts show a curious combination of sources of receipt and items of expenditure: roads, and wine for Holy Communion appearing on one side; rates and pew-rents on the other. The clergy call monthly at the Treasury for their stipends, the Bishop and Archdeacon having theirs remitted to their residences. Leave of absence is regulated by ordinance, and granted by the Bishop, notice appearing in the *Government Gazette*, along with similar notices referring to any other public officials. A Church Council was formed, but its rules and regulations do not affect the temporalities of the clergy and other Church officers, unless the Legislature also makes them into law.

Digitized by Google

The grants to the Wesleyans and Moravians were not regulated in this way, but were paid over to recognized authorities of those bodies for allocation as they saw good. A small grant of £50 was made to the Roman Chaplain to the troops for any local duties that he might see his way to discharge.

The procedure in Barbados is, however, unique, and, as has been shown, it was devised to meet circumstances which obtained nowhere else in the West Indies. For the islands at large this stage of their ecclesiastical history saw the passage from a nominal establishment into simple equality of all religious creeds, with concurrent participation in Island revenues in some cases, but in absolute dependence on voluntary effort in others.

Upon the Church *disestablishment*, as such, has had little effect. It remains as before the Church to which the bulk of the educated and official classes belong: the Congregationalists of Jamaica, for example, with ten congregations and nine white ministers, seem to include, according to a recent report, only "two or three persons of any substance," and this is a denomination—if we can call it such—which in England has always counted more rich and highly educated members than any other Nonconformist group. And for extension among the coloured people and the Negroes the connection with the State as constituted now, without limitation to Church membership, could not in itself, apart from endowment, be of any very marked service to the Church, even where it was not a drawback. As "an appanage of the civil power" it had been "in those islands where State aid was largest, that the influence of the Church had been least felt," wrote the present Secretary of the S.P.G.

Of course, now that the State is in no way committed to the Church, there may in time to come arise conflicts. For it is to be observed that the Church

Digitized by Google

morality, as well as her Creed, was established in the old days. And it is quite possible that European civilization may have to pass through conflicts because the State departs from the Church of Christ in questions of morals which cannot, like those of theology, be left untouched by public law. At present, however, we have not to record any such conflict in the West Indies; in those Colonies which have legalized that inroad on the principle of Affinity, Marriage with a Deceased Wife's Sister, no real difficulty arises, as the clergy are not, even in the Establishment of Barbados, in any way obliged to officiate. The remarriage of divorced persons, even if divorce should here, as in some Australian Colonies, be made easier, would similarly be a State procedure, with which the Church would have no official connection. But still conflicts may arise as time goes on. At present there is peace.

But *disendowment* fell with immediate force, and there can be no doubt that this came with severity upon West India Churchmen. True, the leaders might have seen that it was coming, and might therefore have been preparing for it; but they had their minds very full as it was already. They were only just finding their feet after Emancipation and all the efforts which this involved. A Churchman of the age of sixty when disendowment came would have witnessed Emancipation and the full admission of a vast population to new liberties; and now he was being called upon to take part in shaping the Church as a body working wholly on the basis of voluntary subscriptions. The abolition of Slavery, and the separation of Church and State, were truly great revolutions for the lifetime of a single individual.

And the notice given was very short: the house was to be put in order in very brief space, and while there was much else requiring attention. The actual clergy were secured for life financially, but each parish

Digitized by Google

was now in precarious dependence upon the life of its incumbent, and the Diocesan Churches, as a whole, saw with each death £300 to £400 a year disappear. Many rectors were already advanced in years, and the average duration of life is not high in the tropics. As a matter of fact, the vacancies occurred even more rapidly than had been expected: in Jamaica all the "rectories" were vacated within twenty years. Bishop Nuttall, then an Island Curate, advocated the cumulation of these vested interests into a fund, and the acceptance of complete disendowment rather than the lingering decay of finances involved in the Government plan; but there was not sufficient corporate feeling, or sufficient energy to carry out such a method, as it was not made compulsory. The Government plan, as Bishop Nuttall says, had the merit of simplicity, but it also was very severe.[1]

[1] The relics of endowment in 1897, as collected from the *Colonial Office List*, are as follows:—

1. Jamaica, £3050. The Bishop and Assistant Bishops still appear as "Island Curates."
2. Windward Island, only St. Lucia (2 clergy) £400 (Romanists, £200): disendowment completed elsewhere.
3. Antigua: St. Kitts, £230; Montserrat, £285 (Romanists, £50; Wesleyans, £105); St. Thomas (Danish Government), £185, and Foreign Office Chaplaincy, Saba, Dutch, £100; St. Barts, French, £68.
4. Barbados, £10,000 (Romanists, £50, Moravians £400, Wesleyans £700).
5. Trinidad—amounts not stated, £3800 Church of England. No new appointments as vacancies occur.
6. Guiana, £10,800 (other bodies, £9300).
7. Bahamas, £870 (Presbyterians, £400).
8. British Honduras, disendowment completed.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

REORGANIZATION AND PROGRESS, 1870—1897

Conditions favouring reorganization—Diocesan Constitutions, their leading features—Example, the Constitution of the Church in Jamaica—The Synod of the Province—Increase of Bishops, Clergy, and other Workers—Catechists and Lay Readers—Deaconesses—Education of the Clergy—Education: University, High Schools, Elementary, Sunday Schools—Training of Teachers—Social and Moral Life: Relation of the Races, Marriage, Illegitimate Births, Sobriety, Veracity, Steadiness, Industry, Thrift, Honesty, Crimes, Personal Qualities—Practical Character of Religious Work.

OUR account of disestablishment and disendowment closed with the expression of opinion from one who bore a chief part—perhaps the chief part of all—in the reorganization, to the effect that they fell with severity upon the Church, or, at least, that disendowment did so.

A review of the situation such as should be taken before proceeding to give an account of the reorganization discloses some compensations for which Churchmen must ever feel grateful.

(1) Disestablishment and disendowment did unquestionably give freer life to Churchmen. Thrown on their own resources for government and organization, a new spirit was awakened, faculties hitherto dormant were called into play. It is the same Bishop who stated to his Synod that the voluntary offerings in Jamaica sprang up from £300 in 1870, to £16,000 in 1876. It was Bishop Branch, of Antigua, who in his

Digitized by Google

first Charge said, "Have we been injured by Disendowment? God forbid that I should say so. Never was the Church of England more active in these islands." The Secretary of the S.P.G. writes (*English Church in other Lands*, p. 57)—"The heavy blow of disendowment was not a lasting discouragement. It seemed to draw out a wonderful spirit of self-help." An official publication of the same great Society (*Mission Field*, 1872) has an article on Progress and Disendowment in the West Indies, which contains the following graphic sentence—"A violent shock has been known to restore the power of speech to the dumb; and so it was that the sudden terror of disendowment caused the voice of the Church in Jamaica to be heard in Synod for the first time." In short, a Church which could do as ours did in Jamaica and rise from one Bishop and sixty-six clergy State-paid in 1870, to two Bishops and one hundred and one clergy on a voluntary basis in 1896, is a standing witness against alarmists.

(2) The new financial policy was begun in a period before the great industrial depression set in. Trade was not, indeed, flourishing in 1870, but as compared with 1890 it has a fortunate and a prosperous time. Plans could be thought out then for which there would hardly have been any spirit twenty years later.

(3) Reorganization in the West Indies was called for at a time when there was an ever-rising activity in process in the Church at home with regard to its organization, more particularly with regard to the revival of its constitutional features in dioceses and provinces. The assembly of the clergy in conferences and even in synods was being resumed in England; first in Exeter diocese, 1851, in the face of much alarm and many doubts as to the legality, which latter were soon set at rest, however, by an opinion of the Attorney-General that there was no law against them,

Digitized by Google

provided they did not attempt to promulgate "canons"; and Diocesan Conferences of clergy and laity combined commenced with that of Ely diocese, 1864. The revival by the Provincial Houses of Convocation as effective bodies began in 1852. The constitution of Synods and governing bodies had received further study and attention from the necessity of the Church of Ireland to organize itself, and several Colonial dioceses also had already been more or less constitutionally organized.

(4) Of great assistance also was the commencement just previously of the gathering together in consultation of the Bishops of all the Anglican dioceses of the Empire, of the United States and of certain Missionary jurisdictions. The first Lambeth Conference had met in 1867, and it was composed quite apart from any question as to whether in the constituent dioceses the Church was Established or not. To this Conference, and the succeeding ones, the West Indian Bishops did not fail to repair. There they found themselves considering the great questions of Church order and organization in association with the learning of the Church of England, the practical experience of Colonial Bishops like Selwyn and Gray. Informal as were these Conferences, to the West Indian Bishops they were of incalculable value and guidance, besides being sources of fresh stimulus to zeal in facing their new circumstances. For instance, they took back with them for their own guidance the advice of a Committee of the Conference on the subject of Synods, both diocesan and provincial, of which Bishop Selwyn was Chairman, and of which the report had been subjected to a discussion by the whole Conference. It is pleasant to record that their gratitude for this assistance bore permanent fruit, inasmuch as they were themselves instrumental in securing the continuance of the Conferences; in 1873 they seconded the

Digitized by Google

request of the Canadian Bishops for a second Conference, which was called accordingly in 1878, and thus they bore a part in procuring the continuity of this central element in the Anglican Church.

(5) The unity of Colonial Churches with the Church at home was being placed on a sounder basis. The repudiation of Bishop Colenso by the Church in South Africa, although he continued to be supported by the State, had been a burning question, which compelled Churchmen to make up their minds as to the relationship between the two. The Statesmen of the day saw how incoherent and perplexing the situation had become, and not feeling called upon to solve it, they more and more favoured the withdrawal of State authority and State privilege together. Whatever loss the withdrawal of the latter may have caused, the withdrawal of the authority was a great relief. And so it came about that at the second Lambeth Conference, 1878, the West Indian Bishops in their disestablished position found themselves in company with the vast majority of their colleagues; the Church in Barbados, in fact, shared with the Church at home the peculiar position of being the only thoroughly established Churches represented at the Conference. The Colonial Churches therefore now came into contact with the mother-church solely on the ecclesiastical side; if she had relationship with the State it concerned herself alone. Hence it came that the Churches of the Colonies have been able to go beyond the Church in England in the progress of organization. Resolutions of the Lambeth Conference are only "opinions" in England; but they were taken across the oceans, explained by the Bishops to the Colonial Synods, and in many cases they were carried into effect by Canons.

Yet all this has been done with a vigilant eye upon organic unity. In each Colonial diocese this is provided for by means of the veto-power of the Bishop;

Digitized by Google

no canon can pass which he vetoes, and he would veto any which seemed to be separative in effect. Nothing therefore has been done by any Colony, as yet, to invalidate the legal status of its clergy as still eligible for office in the Church in England, and every English clergyman is, similarly, eligible for work in any Colonial diocese (see Chapter VII.). In this respect the Episcopal veto corresponds to the veto-power of the Governors by which the link with the Crown of Great Britain and Ireland is secured.

(6) At the same time a certain amount of Home Rule has been secured, most salutary in view of the varying circumstances of the Colonial Churches. Some freedom in ritual has resulted from the liberation from the English Act of Uniformity, a freedom which even the Archbishops venture to characterize as "happy." The Book of Common Prayer is adopted as the main standard of public worship and doctrines and institutions. But there is no longer the necessity to regulate the worship in a tropical West Indian Mission Church precisely and identically as that of an English Cathedral.

The recent Lambeth Conference has said, "It is true that no book can supply every possible need of worshippers in every variation of local circumstances."

In the West Indies there was no possibility of wayward or partisan vagaries under Bishops like Austin, Jackson, and Rawle; yet each diocese felt a certain freedom. And it may be that as native clergy and catechists increase there may be developed something of a Negro ἦθος of devotional order and expression.

Lastly, (7) the close connection with the Church at home has been effective in providing the West Indian dioceses with admirable Bishops. Men who were already useful at home in smaller and less independent spheres have been sent out to direct dioceses,

Digitized by Google

and have found their energies expand with the enlargement of their opportunities. As at the outset a Coleridge went out to Barbados with a Fellow of Balliol (Parry) and a Fellow of Exeter (Elliott) as his Archdeacons, so later on a Rawle served for seventeen years at Codrington, and then gave another seventeen years as Bishop of the struggling Church in Trinidad. And so in other dioceses, from parochial or educational experience a succession of clergy has been secured for the Episcopate working in effective harmony with those who have from time to time been elevated from the ranks of the clergy already at work in the islands.

The DIOCESAN CONSTITUTIONS which have been formed in the West Indies since 1870 all bear the following leading features—

(i.) The Episcopal office has been placed in a constitutional position in accordance with Catholic tradition. The Bishop is regarded as the seat of pastoral authority, the clergy as his deputies; but by the relation of the Bishop to Church law, both as legislator and as administrator, and by the necessity of his acting as a member of a Constitutional system, he is now again what he has all along been in theory, though not in practice, in the Church of England.

(ii.) The Freehold character of the tenure of pastoral charge of the clergy has disappeared. The appointment to parishes is now a matter of Synodal regulation, allowing for some freedom of movement according to fitness, and attaching to tenure of pastoral office conditions of continuance of fitness for the duties involved.

(iii.) The Church Laity find a recognized position in Church Councils and the administration of Church affairs. This takes place parochially as before, but to a very much greater extent; and besides that it operates for the diocese generally, by means of a representative

Digitized by Google

system. The Churchwardens, who in England so long represented the laity, are now replaced by a number of officials, both paid and honorary, and by members of Committees and Councils; and in the general conception the Diocese is once more the unit rather than the parish or the congregation.

The effect of this in calling out the activity of laymen is beyond calculation, and the widening of Church life by the distribution of responsibility is producing most salutary changes in the popular conception of what the Church of Christ really is.

(iv.) The basis is wholly voluntary. All are invited to join; none are in any way induced to do so by extra-ecclesiastical pressure. All have a right to the offices of the Church, but they must ask for them or show willingness to receive them. "Laws" and "canons" are still spoken of, but their authority is of the kind called "consensual"; each member of the Church is expected to conform to them, but he can leave the Church if he wishes, or at least leave his membership of it in abeyance.

The number of dioceses precludes the insertion here of sketches of all the several constitutions. A better idea of the present situation can be gained by noticing the chief points in the constitution of some one of them, and naturally that of the principal Colony, Jamaica, offers us the best example for this purpose.

EXAMPLE OF A WEST INDIAN CHURCH CONSTITUTION: JAMAICA.

The Title adopted is "The Church of England in Jamaica," not the Church of Jamaica. (In Antigua the title is "The Church of England in the diocese of Antigua," the word diocese being necessary as St. Kitts and other islands besides Antigua are included;

Digitized by Google

in the Windward Islands, "The Diocese of the Windward Islands, comprising all members of the Anglican Church in the Islands.") The Standard of Faith is Holy Scripture, of which the Book of Common Prayer and the Thirty-nine Articles are taken to be "a true and faithful declaration of doctrine." (Antigua makes no declaration at all; "as this diocese is held to be an integral part of the Church of England.")

Membership of the Church is defined by Baptism, and it is recognized that every baptized person is a subject of the pastoral ministrations of the clergy and can claim the offices of the Church. There is a correlative duty on every such person to do his part in the necessary material support of the Church, and attention is called to this in the canons even when the openness of her offices is asserted. This duty can be held inapplicable only in case of poverty; nevertheless no one is to be rejected from Baptism or Holy Communion by reason of declining to contribute any offering.

But when the question is raised as to legislation and administration, the canons require compliance with the duty as a condition, and for this purpose no one has powers who is not on the register of some congregation as a subscribing member. Then again a person might be baptized and so a member of the Church of Christ, yet not belong to the Anglican branch of it by reason of being enrolled in some congregation entirely outside her rule; there is therefore also a proviso against this—"not on the roll of any other religious body." This was decided in 1871 by joint vote, fifty-four to fourteen. The provisional "Synod," so called sometimes, of 1870, called in accordance with the Local Act of Legislature, had been composed of all baptized persons who chose to make a declaration of membership and give a promise of assent to what should be agreed to. The men elected by this preliminary body met and passed a

Digitized by Google

provisional constitution under which the first regular Synod, 1871, assembled; of which it must strictly be said that it constituted itself. (An interesting discussion on membership took place in Antigua Synod II. Two St. Kitts laymen objected to subscription being a basis, as "sordid," and were supported by one of the Archdeacons. It seems, however, that they were not clearly distinguishing in their minds between claim to pastoral offices and right to legislate. Dr. Nicholls of Dominica was strongly in favour of the canon, and in the end it was carried by twenty-seven to four. The Bishop at the close of the matter stated that "he would not permit any Clergyman in his Diocese to refuse the Holy Communion to any person for merely not subscribing to the Church Funds".[1])

The Synod or Governing Body is composed of three "orders"—(1) The Bishop; (2) All licensed clergy, assistant curates included, and all are expected to attend the Sessions; (3) Lay Representatives; these latter must be Communicants of six months' standing. This last point was decided in 1871, by 31 clergy votes to 1; 32 laity to 5; the question revived in 1874, passed again, clergy 20 to 11, laity 24 to 23.

They are elected by the "settled congregations"; fifty members form a minimum congregation for this purpose; over 200 may have two representatives; smaller congregations may combine. Membership of a congregation means, as above, being registered as subscribing supporters, and not on the roll of any other religious body.

[1] In Windward Islands it is "All persons claiming the Rights, Privileges, and Ministrations of the Church of England in the diocese of the Windward Islands shall be registered as contributing members, and in so doing shall pledge themselves to a minimum payment or Church-rate of Sixpence per month towards the Church Fund in consideration of such Rights, Privileges, and Ministrations."

Digitized by Google

A proposal to confine elective power to Communicants has been brought forward more than once but rejected. The objection taken was, that it was unwise to make participation in Holy Communion a qualification for office or power of any kind. Lost in Synod VII., clergy 14 to 15, laity 13 to 13; again Synod VIII. 22 to 25, and 28 to 34; the Bishop being against on both occasions.

In Synod the voting is of two kinds: in spiritual matters by "orders"; in matters of finance and other things secular *en masse*, with a casting vote to the Bishop. (In Antigua, by orders only if asked for.)

The Episcopal Veto.—If the Bishop dissents against a small majority a proposal falls; but if the majority reaches two-thirds there is a reference to the Synod of the Province; if the Provincial Synod agrees with the Bishop, the matter ends; if it is against him he can refer to the English Committee of Reference. Confirmation by the Provincial Synod and by the English Committee is requisite even if the Orders agree for any proposed new Canon which affects any Article, Rubric, or Canon of the Church of England. On the other hand, any such alteration in England would not be operative in Jamaica until adopted by the Synod.

The Synod meets annually (Antigua biennially). There is an *Incorporated Lay Body—i.e.* a body of four Trustees in whose name all property is held.

A *Diocesan Council:* the Bishop, Archdeacons, twelve clergy, and twelve laity, acting as a Standing Committee of Advice to Synod.

A *Diocesan Financial Board:* the Bishops, the Archdeacons; the members of the Incorporated Lay Body, three clergy, and nine lay members. The Chairman of this Board is to be a Layman, and there is a salaried Lay Accountant.

Digitized by Google

Parochial Councils: i. e. for the old Civil Parishes, fourteen in number, now known ecclesiastically as Rural Deaneries. These are composed of all the licensed clergy in the "Parish" with a Lay representative from each congregation. Their functions are very much those discharged in England by Rural Deans.

A *Church Committee,* for each settled Congregation, of not less than eight nor more than twelve members elected by the Registered Members from a list nominated by the Clergyman. From the members the Clergyman chooses one Churchwarden and the members elect another.

Amongst other institutions there is a Diocesan Board of Education, with Parochial Boards also; a Branch of the Church of England Temperance Society; a Purity Society; a Church Army; a Church Boys' Brigade; a Diocesan Theological College; a Diocesan Journal, *The Jamaica Churchman,* monthly; all under the Synod. The Synod has also official relations with the Jamaica Home and Foreign Missionary Society which it found in existence; local church extension as well as Foreign evangelization are entrusted in large part to it, and its constitution and regulations cannot be altered apart from Synodal approval.

The Bishop is elected by the Synod, with confirmation by the Primate and the majority of the Bishops of the Province. On the first vacancy since the new constitution an election by a majority in each order was not forthcoming; the Synod sat as a Committee for five hours, and a midnight Ballot was ineffective, as was a second at half-past one in the morning. Reference was accordingly made to the Referees in England, who sent out Bishop Tozer, lately retired from Zanzibar; he however resigned almost immediately, and in

Digitized by Google

the new election the resident nominee was elected, the Rev. Enos Nuttall, at that time "Island Curate" of St. George's, Kingston, and a very active member of Synod.

The three Archdeacons of the old civil Counties Surrey, Middlesex and Cornwall, are appointed by the Bishop; it being explicitly stated that their duties are to assist him in the oversight of the diocese. The Rural Deans of the civil "Parishes" are similarly appointed, except that these are annual appointments, while an Archdeaconry is not affected by the decease of a Bishop.

The clergy are Rectors, Curates, and Assistant curates; the Curates have districts assigned, but they are under the superintendence of the Rectors; others may be licensed to officiate. (In Barbados the old term "Curate" has recently been replaced by "Vicar.") The vacancies are filled up by the selection of three clergy by the local Church Committee; one of these the Bishop appoints. In case of the Bishop's inability to accept any of the three, the vacancy is referred to the Synod. (In Antigua, the vestry nominate, the Bishop may accept or reject and ask for a fresh nomination. It was discussed at their First Synod whether the procedure should be as above, or reversely, nomination by the Bishop, acceptance by the Synod: and the above procedure was decided upon.)

Removal of Incumbents.—The canons are drawn in great detail on this. They provide as to who may move in the matter, viz. "the Archdeacon, a Bishop's Commissary, the Parochial Council (*i.e.* Rural Deanery), or not less than one-half of the registered communicants of the Church" (*i.e.* the parish or district); the petition must set forth clearly and distinctly the grounds upon which the removal is prayed, and be presented to the Bishop sitting in Diocesan Council. The grounds of removal are four: (1) "a want of

Digitized by Google

harmony between the Clergyman and his congregation, causing dissatisfaction in the district"; (2) "serious failure of Church Funds"; (3) "diminution of congregation and especially of communicants"; (4) "absence of sufficient reason for expecting satisfactory change in these respects while the clergyman remains in his cure." The Diocesan Council may then reject the petition or authorize the Bishop to appoint a Commission consisting of two of the Clergy and two of the Laity; before this Commission the Clergyman may attend, cross-examine witnesses, and offer evidence. If it decides against him he may attend the Special Meeting of Diocesan Council summoned to consider the report of the Commission. If the Council decide against him, he is removed by the Bishop without appeal. If not dismissed the Council shall "finally dispose" of the matter "as circumstances shall require." It is added, "if the fault shall appear to have been wholly with the Congregation, the Bishop shall admonish them as he shall think proper."

Besides the above procedure for the removal from particular Incumbencies, there is detailed provision for the admonition, suspension, or deprivation from the pastoral office as such; the nature of the charges and the judicial procedure are all most carefully specified (Canon XXXV.). If the charge is of a criminal character, there is no appeal, but if it is a charge relating to ritual or doctrine there is an appeal to the Provincial Synod, and beyond that to the English Committee of Reference. In Synod XXVII. (1896), however, some alterations were made; the Parochial Council was replaced by the Rural Dean as having *locus standi* to petition; in exchange a more distinct position was given to it by the order to refer the case to it instead of to a Commission. When the Diocesan Council meets to consider the Report of the Parish Council, there are added to it the Rural

Digitized by Google

Dean, a clergyman and a layman from among the members of the Parish Council, and also the Clergyman himself with one clergyman and one layman nominated by him. A Commission may, however, be appointed by this specially constituted meeting of Diocesan Council to collect further evidence if it appear that it is advisable to do so; the after proceedings are not altered.

In order to facilitate retirement when incapacitated, and to provide for widows and orphans, abatements from stipend are compulsory (on all clergy since 1881), a yearly offertory is added, with a sum from the Diocesan Fund, and donations and bequests solicited. Participation in this Fund may be claimed at the age of sixty-five. To this Fund was transferred the sum handed over from the old Fund to which Government had required the clergy to contribute in Endowment days. A clergyman may be superannuated at any age by the Bishop, the Diocesan Council and the Financial Board, acting jointly.

All these canons, it is to be remembered, are assented to by the clergy on their acceptance of any office under the Synod.

There is also provision for excommunication of the Laity, either by the Clergyman simply, or if there is protest after inquiry by the Bishop. A special article provides that "the practice of Obeah" shall be a ground of excommunication.

Public Services.—There is at once less individual liberty and more diocesan liberty than in England. The individual incumbent for example is not left to choose as to offertories, they must be weekly; the celebration of Holy Communion must be at least once a month; the conventional shortening of the Daily Service is specifically settled. With regard to the Rubrics the Canon orders as follows:—

"No departure from any Rubric, which has the sanction of

Digitized by Google

general custom, shall be made the ground for the presentment of any Clergyman to the Bishop as for an ecclesiastical offence, unless such presentment originate with the Bishop himself; nor shall the Bishop in any case order such presentment to be made, unless he has first issued a general injunction that such Rubric be more strictly observed."

The Canons are thoroughly in accord with the Lambeth Encyclical of 1897 :—

"We therefore think it our duty to affirm the right of every Bishop within the jurisdiction assigned to him by the Church, to set forth or sanction additional services and prayers when he believes that God's work may be thereby furthered or the spiritual needs of the worshippers more fully met, and to adapt the prayers already in the Book to the special requirements of his own people. But we hold that this power must always be subject to any limitations imposed by the provincial or other lawful authority, and the utmost care must be taken that all such additions or adaptations must be in thorough harmony with the spirit and tenour of the whole Book."

The holding of a Sunday School is obligatory on every parish priest, and at least one Day School; thus the number of the latter went up from 119 in 1870 to 309 in 1896. A Register of schoolmasters and mistresses who are Church members is kept by the Synod.

As to Marriages, the clergy are not required to officiate except where both the parties have been baptized. They are not required to re-marry the innocent party in a divorce, and are forbidden to re-marry the party for whose offence a divorce has been granted. This order is in accordance with that of the Provincial Synod. Parents may be recognized as sponsors, if communicants ("if otherwise eligible," Antigua). (In Windward Islands there is a special prayer for the Governor, the Lieutenant-Governor, and the local Legislature; the Burial Service may be that of the American Church at the discretion of the Clergyman.)

Finance.—The basis of Finance is a Diocesan Church Fund; composed of (1) a minimum weekly

Digitized by Google

subscription of threepence by every member on the Church Register; (2) Special Offertories, and (3) Pew Rents, under certain provisos in favour of a certain provision for unrented seats. (In Windward Islands it is sixpence a month; in Antigua, one-tenth of the parochial funds after the stipends of clergy and church-officers are paid; and there is also a collection annually for the poorer parishes.) To subscribe to this Fund is "laid as a duty" on every person registered as accepting or desiring the pastoral care of the Church; to omit it is allowable only in case of poverty. But on this head the greatest care is taken to prevent any misconception arising that the Sacraments cannot be had without payment. They are open to all. The payment is the condition of active membership and participation in Church affairs.

The objects of this Fund are specified. (1) Special Church Endowment (for particular churches), (2) sustentation (clergy and catechists), (3) endowment of the see, (4) stipend of the Bishop, £800, and including also that of Assistant Bishop if there be one (£400), with rent and repairs to residences, (5) expenses of diocesan business, (6) general endowment, (7) general sustentation, (8) sustentation reserve, (9) emergencies.

The clergy stipends are fixed by the Financial Board—in so far as its funds are concerned, that is to say; additions may be made by congregations, but these are sent to the Board, not direct to the incumbent—at £120 as minimum. The incumbencies are divided into three classes: £180 and upwards; £120 to £180; and some specially allowed to be below £120; the numbers in 1897 were respectively 26, 37, and 19. Some of those in the first class rise to £250 and £300. In connection with this provision it is noteworthy that the Congregationalist minister Dr. Barrett, of Norwich, who visited Jamaica on behalf of a Congregationalist Missionary Society in

Digitized by Google

1895, reported that "no English pastor could do his work for less than £150 a year with a manse and a horse." The expenses of public worship are a local charge, for which the local Church Committees are responsible. Repairs of churches are a local charge at present, pending the creation of a Building Fund.

The reader of our previous chapters on the clergy must feel something like amazement on reflecting that the elaborate and well-considered organization of which some of the chief points have just been set out replaces, after less than eighty years, the unorganized condition of the Church in Jamaica. The points in the other dioceses are fundamentally similar, with the exception of Barbados, where, as already explained, the Synodical constitution rests upon a financial basis provided by the State, and is limited in effect to such canons and rules as the State endorses.

The reality of these Synods and the vitality they exhibit are evident on the most superficial reading of their records. To the active-minded layman who, already interested in the spiritual concerns of his own immediate neighbourhood, here finds himself considering questions in their broad bearing, extending to the welfare of the whole Colony to which he belongs, there is a real opportunity for zealous service. If in time gone by the Baptist leaders of small and scattered congregations went off the track, this is now corrected by their frequent assembling in unions like these. And if in particular parishes well-disposed laity of the Church found the range of parochialism unstimulating and zeal checked too often by the accident of want of sympathy with the individual clergyman, such men, whether white or coloured, can now find in the National range of the Church's operations and in the contact with laymen from all other parishes a length and breadth of Christian sympathy and aim that go far to consolidate and render

Digitized by Google

effective the standing call to Christian men to be up and doing. Bishop Branch expressly said in 1887:—

"The interest of the laity never was so strong as now. I can especially speak of this in disendowed Dioceses where our Laity have a potential voice in the Councils of the Church, in the disposal of Church funds, in the appointment of their Clergymen, and in the election of their Bishop. And no one who sits, as I do, in Synods with them, and who knows and sees their keen interest in all the Church's work, can doubt for a moment either the wisdom or the happiness of giving laymen a full share in Church legislation."

To the clergy value of the Synods is incalculable; they find a source of authority in many points which would have been beyond their own power wisely to determine; they find their pastoral difficulties brought before a full court of their brethren, clerical and lay, and discussed gravely and with a sense of responsibility due to the fact that every one has to guide his actions by the decisions arrived at. And the laity have their participation in these benefits.

The topics brought up for discussion, some regularly, some occasionally, keep before the mind of both the pastors and the leaders of the people the variety and the fulness of Christian work. The perusal of records shows us men seriously combining their judgments upon such grave problems as how to bring young men into ministerial work; how to best regulate lay help; how to constitute and guide an order of efficient catechists; how far each congregation should be on its own resources; what causes can best be furthered by Societies created for the purpose; how far Sponsors should be required in Baptism; how subscriptions can be made a rule without attaching the idea of "payment" or "sale" to the offices of the Church; whether religious education should be insisted on as the rule or provided for separately from secular instruction; whether marriage of divorced persons should be allowed. All of these questions and many

Digitized by Google

more have been debated in the course of a few successive Synods during these last twenty years, besides the ordinary routine of the administration of expanding work.

In membership of a Synod the full social feeling of the Church is called out. Witness the case when at a Jamaica Synod a clergyman pleaded his parochial work as a reason for not accepting a journey to England as a Deputation on a matter which the Synod thought he was the most competent man to carry out; the members of the Synod stood up in a body to mark their opinion that, in spite of his parochial duties, the Church needed this service from him; and he went. And for the laity, Dr. Nicholls, a public-spirited physician in Dominica, has given eloquent expression to his conviction of their beneficial effect.

The attendances at Synod give evidence of vitality. The clergy attend largely, as they are expressly enjoined to do; and the laity attend very well considering the remoteness and the climate. A Jamaica Synod would have a quorum with twelve members of each order, but the attendance is usually about sixty of each, sixty-eight clergy and eighty-one laity the highest. In Antigua with its several islands clergy varied from twenty to thirty-four, laity fifteen to nineteen. In Barbados, where there is less direct power, and the Legislatures and Vestries still provide opportunity for lay action in matters ecclesiastical, the list of Lay Representatives to Synod was for some time but meagrely filled. In a recent calendar however improvement appears: there are only five unfilled places.

Our account of these centres of Church activity may well be closed with the Prayer to be used in every church in Jamaica immediately before and during the continuance of the Session of Synod.

Digitized by Google

O most gracious God, whose Holy Spirit doth guide and govern Thy faithful people, and preserve them in the Bond of Peace and in Righteousness of Life, we beseech Thee to hear our Prayers for the Synod of the Church of England in this Island, now about to assemble (or, assembled) in Thy Name.

Send Thy Heavenly Blessing upon the Bishop and Clergy and all the members thereof; direct and prosper all their consultations for the welfare of Thy Church.

Take away from them all misunderstanding and prejudice, and whatever else may hinder a godly union and concord, and give them a right judgment in all things.

And may all Thy people with willing minds receive whatever they shall lawfully ordain and appoint; that all the members of Thy Church, walking by one rule, may strive together for the truth of Thy Gospel against all ungodliness and sin, for the glory of Thy Name, and the extension of Thy Kingdom upon the earth, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

THE PROVINCIAL SYNOD.

This constitutes a bond of union and a source of some authority. In one sense each diocese is a separate unit of the Church of England. The Bishops when assembled announce themselves—"We, Bishops of that branch of the Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church called the Church of England, exercising our functions in the West Indies"; but there is a constitution, and the Diocesan Synods refer some action solely or jointly to the Province.

It is not a complete "Synod," but a provisional one, with provision for a wider constitution if desired. It consists at present solely of the Bishops. From among themselves they elect a Primate, who, however, remains in his own See: and by recognition of the Bishops at Lambeth in 1897 he is granted the title of Archbishop. The first to hold the Primacy was the venerable Bishop Austin of Guiana; the present Primate and first Archbishop is Dr. Enos Nuttall of Jamaica. The geographical circumstances of the dioceses—and, at the present time, their poverty—

Digitized by Google

are such as to render a Synod of Bishops and Clergy impracticable: even as a representative body the expense in money and time involved by the distances would be insuperably great. The Bishops have all been present at only one assembly (1888). The Lambeth Conference of 1878 specially considered the situation and advised the present system.

The Synod is two things: it is a House of Bishops, and it is a "Chamber" in a Constitutional system. As the former it deals with full authority with all affairs appertaining to the Episcopal office, and each Bishop as he is elected engages to exercise his Episcopal functions according to the Canons of the Synod. He makes the following declaration—"I, A. B., do declare my submission to the authority of the Provincial Synod of the West Indies, and of the Primate of the Province duly exercising in a lawful manner the powers committed to him by the said Synod: And I further agree to be bound by all the lawful regulations which are now in force by authority of the said Synod, and by all such other regulations as may from time to time be made and issued by the authority of the said Synod." He thus accepts Canon VI. which provides for the trial of Bishops, should any charges be made against them. Episcopal functions in regard to the ordering of the Services of the Church are in this way not left to the discretion of the individual Bishops, but are regulated by a Canon (VIII.), *e. g.* the adoption of the Shortened Daily Services, permission for additional services made up of prayers from the Prayer-Book with Psalms and Hymns, separation of Mattins, Litany, and Holy Communion on Sundays.

In the second character it acts in relation to the Diocesan Synods. These have decided to remit to it certain questions and to refrain from considering others as decided without its confirmation, *e. g.* the election of a Bishop; they have also constituted it a Court of

Digitized by Google

Appeal in cases of ritual and doctrine, but not the ultimate Court. On the other hand, the Synod can initiate proposals or pass resolutions on matters not purely Episcopal, and these do not take effect in any diocese unless adopted by the local Synod also. This is the case with such questions as are dealt with in the resolutions of the Provincial Synod upon marriage of divorced persons; marriage with a deceased wife's sister; publication of banns; intercession for Missions; institution of deaconesses; secular callings of deacons and age of admission; the words of distribution in Holy Communion; sponsors in Baptism. In these Resolutions they employ such terms as "do express their solemn and united opinion," "express their unanimous desire," "place before the Churches of the Province their deliberate opinion." Each Bishop therefore takes his seat in his own Synod strengthened by the fact that in pressing resolutions of this kind he is not only discharging his duty to his own conscience but is appealing to both clergy and laity with all the weight due to the whole House of Bishops in their part of the world.

The Synod itself is not removed wholly from the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Canterbury. His consent was required for the formation of the Province, and is required still for any change in its boundaries, or in diocesan boundaries within it, *e. g.* when Tobago was taken recently from Windward Islands and placed in Trinidad; and when St. Lucia was added to the Windward Islands. Each Bishop on his Consecration takes the oath of obedience to the Archbishop of Canterbury contained in the Prayer-Book "Order of Consecration of Bishops"; and this alike whether he is consecrated by the Archbishop in England, or by his own Primate in the West Indies.

The Synod arose from a Conference of the Bishops in 1873, when the Bishops of Guiana, Antigua,

Digitized by Google

Nassau, and the Coadjutor of Barbados met, and another in London in 1878 with five Bishops. The first formal Synod was in 1883 (Jamaica): others met 1887 (Barbados, Codrington College), 1888 (London, on occasion of the Lambeth Conference), and 1895 (Guiana).

The official connection with the Church at home arises from the allowance of a superior jurisdiction to the Archbishop of Canterbury. It is usual for Bishops to be consecrated by him, although this is not indispensable; Bishop Holme of Honduras was consecrated by the West Indian Bishops in Bridgetown Cathedral. But it goes beyond this in the institution, by the Provincial Synod and the Diocesan Synods, of a Committee of Reference, composed of the Archbishops of Canterbury and York and one other English Bishop, commencing in order of seniority: with assessors. This Committee constitutes the final Court of Appeal in cases of ritual and teaching. It is also invested with certain disciplinary powers with regard to the Bishops themselves. There is, however, some difference of opinion as to its exact purpose and powers, Bishops Temple and Creighton, successively members as Bishops of London, not taking an identical view.

Taking occasion from the existence of this "Committee," the Lambeth Conference of 1897 proposes "to form a central consultative body for supplying information and advice," with a moral authority only. "We have left," they say, "the formation of it to the Archbishop of Canterbury, who already finds himself called on to do very much of what is proposed to be done by this council." They further recommend that every Bishop "consecrated in England under the Queen's mandate for service abroad" should make a declaration of "due honour and deference" to the Archbishop of Canterbury, besides taking the "oath of Canonical

Digitized by Google

obedience" to his own Metropolitan—a procedure which is precisely that required already of every Bishop in the West Indian Province.

To the great council of Bishops known as the Lambeth Conference all West Indian Bishops both Diocesan and Coadjutor are summoned; and their dioceses participate in the great benefits of their resort to that seat of counsel.

THE BISHOPS, CLERGY, AND OTHER WORKERS.

Even during the strain of reorganization since disestablishment there has been a continuous increase in the number of clergy at work in the West Indies. The number of Bishops has been increased by the formation of the dioceses of Trinidad, 1872, and Honduras, 1891, and for some years there has been an Assistant Bishop (Douet) in Jamaica.

The Episcopate acts as a most valuable means of bringing to West Indian work clergy of experience from England, just as the chief posts in civil government, by means of the Governors, Colonial Secretaries, Chief Justices, and Attorney-Generals. Besides the Bishops named on page 152, the West Indian Church has in this way had the services of an experienced worker in Newfoundland (Spencer), and a headmaster of a Cathedral School and Fellow of Pembroke, Oxford (Bishop Mitchinson); while the present Episcopate has brought one from important rural parishes in East Anglia, another from a town parish in Dover, another from the centre of the busy town of Leicester, another from the heart of South London, and the latest from a Training College, both town and country parishes, and the provostship of a Scottish Cathedral. From the ranks of its own clergy the West Indian Church has received the first two Bishops of Antigua, Jackson and Branch, noble labourers both, and col-

Digitized by Google

leagues for many years, for Bishop Branch was Coadjutor from 1882, and was Diocesan Bishop only two years; the first Bishop of Honduras (Holme); the present Primate; and above all the venerable first Primate, William Piercy Austin, first Bishop of Guiana, whose name will be memorable beyond the range of West Indian Church history as that of one who was privileged to be a Bishop for fifty years, and in full work almost to the very end. In a tropical climate with a multiform range of work, his spiritual energy never abated, while his wisdom and counsel increased in force through all these years. The esteem of a Colony was exhibited on the occasion of his Episcopal Jubilee by a Government vote of $10,000, unique in modern times. The good Bishop was able by this means to forward his plan for a Cathedral, for to that he devoted this tribute on the part of the laity amongst whom his working life had been passed.

The clergy are not now largely drawn from the English Universities. The tide of young life does not set towards these Colonies. It has therefore been a great boon to them that the Missionary College of St. Augustine, Canterbury, has been founded, and they can reflect that they provided it with its first Warden, Bishop Coleridge. From this source some sixty clergy have proceeded, particularly to Guiana, where much purely missionary work is still in process. From within themselves Codrington College has been invaluable; Guiana and Jamaica owe to it a few of their clergy, but Antigua owes more, and Barbados and the Windward Islands the majority of theirs.[1] Bishop

[1] The list of Guiana clergy from 1798 up to 1891 given by Farrar is as follows:—Oxford and Cambridge 32, Dublin 8, Durham 4, Aberdeen 1 (*i.e.* British Universities 45); St. Augustine's 24; other Theological Colleges 11; of no collegiate education, or not specified, 90; and Codrington 17.

The diocesan list of Antigua in 1895 was Cambridge 4,

Digitized by Google

Jackson was one of the first students under Mr. Pinder, and the first "scholar" of the college, and Bishop Branch was educated there under Mr. Rawle. The new Theological College at Jamaica has hardly had time yet to tell. With regard to supply from England the Bishop of Jamaica hopes that it will continue; besides what can be expected from within, he thinks three or four fresh arrivals every year would be beneficial to Jamaica.[1] If ordination is granted to an English

---

Durham 2, St. Augustine's 3, Theological Colleges 4, Training Colleges 2, U.S.A. 2, Germany 1, of no collegiate education 10, and Codrington 10 (38).

That of Barbados in the same year:—Oxford and Cambridge 9, St. Augustine's 2, various 9, no college 5, Codrington 34 (59).

That of Windward Islands:—Cambridge 1, St. Augustine's 1, Theological College 1, U.S.A. 1, Canada 1, of no college 3, and Codrington 7 (15).

Of the 112 last enumerated it appears that only 18 had had no collegiate education. In 1883 the Province of South Africa found that 104 out of 218 of its clergy were in this position: so that the West Indies has not been in any special disfavour on the part of educated candidates for Holy Orders.

[1] In reference to the necessity of clergy ordained in the Colonies requiring by the Colonial Clergy Act, 1874, special licences from the English Archbishops before they can serve in English incumbencies, or even curacies, the West Indian Bishops sent a communication to the Archbishops in 1895, asking that the law "be so administered as not to press harshly and unduly on men ordained in the Colonies who seek work in England after having first passed examinations equivalent to those required by English Bishops, and who then having rendered good and lengthy service in the Colonies return to England with satisfactory letters commendatory from the Bishops in whose dioceses they have served."

They also sent a letter to every English Bishop expressing their opinion that knowledge and experience of Colonial work would be of great advantage to the English clergy, and asked that such service for a term of years should be regarded as "of no less value nor less deserving of recognition than the more quiet and less dangerous work at home."

The present state of "Patronage" in England leaves too small a fraction of the appointments in the hands of the Bishops for

Digitized by Google

candidate, there is required a promise on the part of the candidate to stay five years in the diocese. The Bishop makes himself practically responsible for providing new men with spheres of work.

It can hardly be expected from the West Indian clergy that theological or literary work should proceed from their ranks. Groups of parochial clergy, in a tropical climate, with widely scattered parishes, are hardly in a position for original intellectual work. And yet their ranks have usually contained two or three men who were able to write. Before emancipation Mr. Bridges wrote his Annals of Jamaica with an ability and a vigour of expression which leave an impression even on a reader who disagrees with him almost continuously; Mr. Harte of Barbados published some lectures on the Gospels, which are to be found even to-day among the cottage books of English parishes; Bishop Parry and Archdeacon Elliott both appeared in print, and Bishop Coleridge's Charges and Addresses to Candidates for Holy Orders and to his clergy contain much practical divinity, resting upon independent conviction and wide study. Indeed, perhaps the best productions of the West Indian clergy would be the various Charges of the Bishops from time to time. Beyond these the present Bishop Churton of Nassau has produced his *Island Missionary of the Bahamas, a Manual of Instruction and Routine;* and his *Missionary's Foundation of Doctrine* has won its way to esteem in England apart from its special aim. The present Bishop of Jamaica in his *Churchman's Manual* has succeeded in giving to the English Church for

any considerable action to be taken; but with representations such as these before them the Lambeth Conference spoke with approval of free exchange between service at home and abroad—"it is good for the Church that men should go from one service to another, and under proper regulations this ought not to be difficult."

Digitized by Google

use by those who must have their theological and devotional library practically condensed in a single volume, an admirable manual, widely in use in England. The late Archdeacon Clark of Antigua produced on that island his learned Latin work on *The Apostolic Succession, Mission, and Jurisdiction of the Anglican Church*, and Principal Bindley has added to his work in Patristic theology. Archdeacon Thomas Farrar of Berbice produced in tropical Guiana a work on *The Christian Ministry* which has passed through several editions in England. And in the special line of ethnological research and narrative William Henry Brett, the Guiana Missionary, takes high rank.

Appreciation of activity on the part of the clergy can be shown by the Bishops, and advantage taken of special talents by the appointments to archdeaconries and rural deaneries; the latter are honorary, but they have a good deal of work to do in assisting the Bishop. But in the Synods there is still ampler scope for special talent; in the business of Synod or on some of its numerous and important Committees many an active mind finds congenial occupation and appreciation from fellow-workers and others who benefit thereby.

Cathedral Chapters have been formed in Barbados, the Windward Islands, Guiana, and Trinidad; Antigua rejected the proposal by votes of all three orders. Guiana alone has a Cathedral specially erected; Bishop Austin lived to see its foundation laid; the outside is now complete: the architect, Sir Arthur Blomfield, is himself the grandson of that great benefactor of the Colonial Church, C. J. Blomfield, Bishop of London. In Bridgetown, Kingstown (St. Vincent), and Port of Spain the principal Parish Church is the Cathedral. Nassau has a Cathedral, but no Chapter.

The limitation of regular work in the Church to

Digitized by Google

the clergy is of course now a thing of the past everywhere. In the West Indies there must of necessity be extension to other offices and orders, in view (1) of the desirableness of enrolling in regular employment more and more of the coloured Negro population, and (2) of the prospect of supply of incomes adequate for European clergy or clergy living after the European manner—say at £150 or £200—not being forthcoming in any increase such as growth of population and of pastoral activity require. The institution of Brotherhoods of unmarried clergy is sometimes thought of, as by Bishop Bree (Windward Islands Synod III.), but none has been founded as yet.

In their very first Conference the Bishops faced this situation. They saw that an increase of the minor orders of catechist or catechist-schoolmaster was indispensable. They asked the S.P.G. to allot exhibitions of £25 a year to Codrington College to young men for preparation for such posts in comparison with £50 for those who were judged fit to be prepared for full ordination. Nothing however came of this. Indeed there must be serious doubt whether the best training for Catechists must not be mainly parochial, under the clergy directly, with occasional attendance at college "lectures" besides. This is in fact what has been provided in the diocese where the system of catechists has risen to large proportions, Jamaica. In 1896 there were in employment as many as eighty-eight salaried and sixteen unsalaried catechists, some being schoolmasters and catechists, others wholly employed in parochial or mission work. There is a systematic arrangement for the instruction of the most promising at the Theological College, which four times a year has a week devoted to them. For the study of the whole body a six years' course is mapped out, and there is an annual examination which as time goes on will be made obligatory. Of their

Digitized by Google

present and prospective value the Report to Synod XXVI. (1896) contains the following opinion:—

"As is natural and inevitable among such a large body of men of different ranks, attainments, and character, there frequently occur incidents requiring discretion and considerable patience on the part of the Bishop and other authorities. Occasionally, though only occasionally, cases arise of very unsatisfactory conduct which demand summary measures; but on the other hand the value of the earnest, self-denying, and efficient work of the Lay Helpers, whether paid or unpaid, whether Catechists or Honorary Lay Readers, is more and more apparent to all observers. And the services to Church and State of such centres of influence, especially in isolated parts of the Diocese, deserve all praise and commendation, as well as call for gratitude to the Divine Head of the Church."

Included in the above opinion are the 101 Honorary Lay Readers and Catechists holding the licence of the Bishop and nominated by the Clergy. There is an Association of Lay Helpers, but the constitution of this is being modified so as to enable it to constitute a Branch of the *Brotherhood of St. Andrew* formed in U. S. A. in 1886 as an Order of Laymen. A Memorandum on this body was presented to Synod XXVI. by the Bishop, part of the proposal being to enrol paid Catechists in a "Chapter," and Voluntary Lay Readers in another.

There can be little doubt that the sympathetic and at the same time very practical spirit with which lay work is being organized in Jamaica is one of the very strongest points in the Church work of that diocese.

And some of the other dioceses need the development of this agency even more. In the widely scattered parishes of the Leeward Islands, the Windwards, and the Bahamas, it is impossible for the single rector to give close pastoral attention and to provide for regular ministrations, nor is there, as was pointed out, any present hope of the number of clergy being increased. Here is a sketch of the duties of a

Digitized by Google

St. Kitts' rector (Rev. H. Hughes, *Mission Field*, December 1895)—"Multiply by four the area of an ordinary English clergyman's work; substitute black for white people; halfpennies for shillings; two or three churches as the permanent charge of a single priest, unaided except perhaps by a lay reader, four or five services on every Sunday, preaching unlimited, and a scorching sun, and you have in a nutshell the conditions of Church life in a West Indian parish." And to this we have sadly to add irregularity in the receipt of stipend, and indeed complete uncertainty as to whether it will be received in full at all.

The duties allowed to Jamaica Catechists and Lay Readers are such as to enable them to render just the assistance shown to be required in the above statement. They act under the direction of the Parochial clergy, of course, and each is licensed under a particular clergyman; they may read prayers and Scripture, and may catechize or "read homilies and other religious discourses," *i. e.* "printed sermons supplied for their use and read from the printed book," in any consecrated or licensed building, as he may direct; they may preach their own sermons from the pulpit if specially licensed to do so, and in either black gown or ordinary lay dress; they may instruct children and adults; and they may officiate at Burials (which is very necessary in a climate where it is usual to bury within twenty-four hours of death).

In view of the impossibility of distributing clergy in full orders in any greatly increased numbers to the parish churches and mission chapels of these islands, consideration has further been given (1) as to which secular means of earning income seemed compatible with the priesthood; this has been limited to education and in some cases to medical practice: and (2) as to the establishment of an order of permanent Deacons, who might follow secular callings, wear

Digitized by Google

ordinary attire, and retain lay designation. Windward Islands diocese has definitely provided for such.

The Synod has also constituted the office of Deaconess. "Women of devout character and approved fitness may be set apart by the Bishop for the work of a Deaconess—namely, the care of our Lord's sick and poor, the education of the young, the religious instruction (under the control of the parish Clergyman) of the neglected, and the work of moral reformation, and duties of a kindred nature. It shall also be an especial part of the work of Deaconesses to become sponsors for illegitimate children and others needing special care, and to be to them effectual spiritual guardians" (Canon XXVIII.). A Deaconess is to be thirty years of age (unless for special reason admitted by the Bishop at an earlier age); to have a year's preparation; to belong to a community only when its rules are approved by the Bishop; and to work in any parish only with the consent of the incumbent. There is a Deaconess Institution recognized by Synod; it contains a Nursing as well as a Parochial Department; and is supported by subscriptions, with grants from the S.P.C.K. and the Christian Faith Society. In 1895 there were six Deaconesses and fifteen sub-workers, many of them trained Nurses. They also assist in the Leper hospital. It is to be hoped that the Deaconesses and Sisters may be able to remove something of that reluctance to parochial visitation and works on the part of ladies which strikes the sojourner in West Indian households.

It may be noted that the Jamaica Synod contemplates men permanently remaining lay deacons; it deprecated (Synod XVI.) their being raised to the full Diaconate, unless they qualified in the regular manner so far as learning and intellectual attainments are concerned. But it was quite willing that the Theological College should be made use of for the purpose of so

Digitized by Google

qualifying themselves by any who desired that object and seemed likely to attain it.

Jamaica has also set on foot a "Church Army," with a Training Home for workers who conduct evangelistic meetings, visit persons in their homes, and engage in colportage of Bibles, Prayer and Hymn Books; "quietly and unassumingly doing much good and winning the esteem and good wishes of clergy and people" (Synod XXVII.).

EDUCATION OF THE CLERGY.

Since 1870, Codrington College has done much of what was expected of it by its Founder, but for a more limited area than the whole of the British West Indies. The clergy of Barbados and of the Leeward and Windward Islands are principally recruited from this College, with a few also in Trinidad and Guiana. Principal Rawle, 1847—1864, gave a strong tone to its studies, and the clergy trained by him have had a strong impression of the wholesomeness of hard work and the value of sound theology: under a successor, Archdeacon Webb, 1864—1884, who was trained by him, his tradition was carried forward for twenty years more, and has since been continued. (*See* Appendix.)

But the distance of Jamaica, 1000 miles, and the expense of the voyage (£5 each way, second class) rendered resort to Barbados impracticable, except for the holder of the joint Diocesan Scholarship of the S.P.C.K. and S.P.G., and now and then one or two others—quite out of the question for Catechists. The Bishop and Synod have therefore instituted the Jamaica Theological College, and the S.P.G., though Trustees for Codrington, have recognized the legitimacy of this step by including the College among the beneficiaries of the noble Marriott bequest (1897) to

Digitized by Google

the extent of a grant of £1000. The College has three purposes: (1) Preparation for Holy Orders in Jamaica, (2) Instruction of Catechists, (3) of Church Army agents. The former class of "students" reside for a period according to their needs, and give their whole time to their studies, with some parochial work in Kingston: the other classes visit the College at intervals for select studies. It is supported by parochial offertories and donations, with assistance from S.P.C.K., £80 (1895); C.F.S., £40; and received a gift from Lady Howard de Walden, which yields an income of £200. In 1897 it had ten students, one from King's College, London, finishing here his studies as specially preparatory for Jamaica work; and two probationers, one a Licentiate of Durham; Catechists attended in groups, and some Churchmen in training at the undenominational Mico Institution attended the College for theological instruction. Two Jamaicans, Mr. Burriss and Mr. March, who had offered themselves for the Mission in West Africa, were sent to Codrington for a time, and then finished their preparation here. The staff consists of a Warden and a Tutor. The Bishop gives personal direction and supervision, and, with the Assistant Bishop, lectures occasionally, as do some of the Parochial Clergy. The admirably practical character of Jamaican Church work comes out in the report that there were lectures in the College on Jamaican Church History, and on Church Music, and one, by a layman, on Keeping Church Accounts according to the requirements of Synod. For Mission students there was instruction in Building and Carpentry. The College also contains a lending library for the Clergy.[1]

[1] With this institution may be compared the Wesleyan Theological Institution; and especially the *Calabar Institution* for the training of candidates for the Baptist Ministry and Schoolmasters, which had 7 students with the former object, and 23 for

Digitized by Google

In Guiana there is a Training College for Catechists among the East Indians, working under immense difficulties. Of the five students recently reported as in the College, it is said that there were necessarily five classes for study, "no two students being able to work the same subject together," through diversity of language and attainment. In 1850 an attempt had been made to found a Bishops' College; £3000 was raised, and lectures began, but it became mixed up with a Government Training College, and soon ceased operations in the Theological department. The attempt was premature, no doubt, and for the present this Colony must look rather to St. Augustine's and Codrington.

EDUCATION.

1. *University.*—The Church of England would not be expected to be responsible for Collegiate education in Colonies where her own organization was only being formed when the Universities of Great Britain and Ireland were being thrown open, and when all the new colleges, except King's College, London, were founded entirely apart from Religious education. It has happened, however, that the one College in the West Indies, Codrington, was founded very expressly in connection with the Church, and placed under the S.P.G. as Trustees. It is not, however, as is sometimes supposed, a purely Theological College, but aims at giving an education in Arts to all comers. The Principal must be in Holy Orders, and the staff

the latter at last report. The (English) Baptist Missionary Society continues to provide the Tutors, and to pay for buildings; the local congregations do the rest. The schoolmasters need not be Baptists. This Institution has been invaluable to the Baptist congregations in Jamaica.

Digitized by Google

Churchmen: for the students there is a conscience clause. The foundation scholarships are confined to Theology; but the Government of Barbados give open Scholarships, and there are some endowments which are open also. The Bishop of Barbados is Chairman of the Local Council, all the other West Indian Bishops are Vice-Presidents. Under the Chairmanship of Bishop Mitchinson the College was affiliated to the University of Durham, and the studies are regulated accordingly. Several attempts have been made to divert this institution from its Founder's purpose, but a more serious difficulty is the greatly reduced income derived from the Estates which constitute its endowment, and at present, 1897, it is working with a reduced staff. (*See* Appendix.)

The same reasons which induced the Bishop of Jamaica to found his Theological College, have led to the laying down the lines of a General College in that island in 1896. It is in a rudimentary condition at present, and the staff is simply the staff of the Church High School; its students numbered three at 1897 Synod.

These are the only University institutions in our islands. But reference may be made to a spirited attempt in Jamaica to maintain an Institute (assisted by Government) with a Library and Museum, and with Lectures on the "University Extension" plan, and a Home Reading Union. In this gallant enterprise the Bishop and his clergy are taking a most honourable part.

2. *High Schools.*—In the older Colonies there are a good many small foundations based on endowments given in earlier stages of their history, including the Slavery period. Recent years have witnessed the remodelling of these, and the institution of new High Schools, or Grammar Schools, some for girls as well as those for boys, to a very creditable extent.

Digitized by Google

"Harrison College," Bridgetown (135 boys), attains the highest point in quality of education: some of its boys have been able to take Open Scholarships in England, besides holding local scholarships from their own Governments allotted by English Examiners on the basis of English standards. The Royal College, Trinidad; the Queen's College, Georgetown; the Lodge School, Barbados (37); the Jamaica High School, and the Queen's College, Barbados, for girls (130); and in smaller Colonies, Grenada, Antigua, St. Kitts, Montserrat, Nassau (two girls' schools also), there are Grammar Schools. In Barbados there are also five intermediate schools (249).

Such of the old schools as were connected with the Church in the days of Establishment were, after 1870, treated much as the Endowed Schools in England have been, in respect to the religious element. The Holy Scriptures are part of the curriculum, and prayers are said; but the Teachers are not required to be members of the Church any more than the scholars. And, as in England, some dissatisfaction with the results—and the principles—of this new system has led to several movements on the part of the Church to have High Schools of her own; several Synods have the question of Secondary Education regularly on the agenda of their sessions. The Grammar Schools of St. John's, Antigua, St. Kitts, and Montserrat are Church Schools.

In Jamaica there is a Church Grammar School with eight masters and eighty-seven boys, of whom only five were withdrawn from instruction in Church Catechism. In Synod XXVII. a motion was carried that the Government be asked to give a capitation grant for each pupil attaining a standard to be fixed by Government.

In Trinidad the Romanists' School continues to be the largest in the Colony, 180, as compared with 78 in the

Digitized by Google

Government High School (1896), and it shares in Government grants; the Convent School for girls is self-supporting; and there is a Convent School in Grenada. In Jamaica there are High Schools maintained by the Wesleyans (York Castle High School), both boys and girls; by the Presbyterians (Kingston Collegiate School), and by the Jesuits.

The future of Secondary education as between Denominational Schools and State Schools is by no means clear, it is evident: in the West Indies, what every Island Legislature must feel is that in detached communities governed largely from home and with much of their surplus wealth (if any) sent away to England, the number of people likely to be efficient in serving on the Governing Bodies of High Schools is very limited. If, therefore, bodies like Church Synods, Wesleyan Conferences, and Presbyteries desire to conduct schools, it would be mere political doctrinairism to refuse Government grants for the secular education they give, provided, of course, protection by the conscience clause be loyally observed, especially where the schools may be alone in a locality.

3. *Elementary Education.*—In Elementary education the weight of Churchmen, supported by Romanists, and, to a large extent, by Wesleyans and Moravians, has been sufficient to give the same general character as in England—a Denominational system, supplemented by purely Government Schools with unsectarian religious teaching. This has been done in spite of a strong bias towards the latter class of schools exclusively, on the part of some Governors and leading officials, as has been seen in the case of Trinidad. But a judicious persistence on the part of Church authorities, and sagacious recognition on the part of legislatures of where the strength of educational interest really lay, has led to a peaceful development on the above lines. In Jamaica,

Digitized by Google

Barbados, and Guiana, the whole system is Denominational; in Grenada there are 27 Denominational to 10 Government Schools; Trinidad, 126 to 61; Bahamas, 70 (33 Church) to 41; Dominica had 13 Government Schools, of which Mr. Lucas says they are unequal in efficiency to the Denominational.

Both sets of schools receive grants after inspection, and work under a Government Board of Education in each Colony. Leading Churchmen serve on these Boards: the Bishop of Jamaica is Vice-Chairman, and is also Chairman of the Visitors of the Girls' Training College; in Barbados the Bishop is Chairman. A minister or other representative of each of the chief denominations is usually invited; and the local "managers" of the schools, even of the Government ones, are largely composed of clergy and ministers.

In these ways the cause of education is not left to a Department, which in a small Colony would really mean a single official. The Synods and Boards of Managers are able to make practical suggestions to the Government, such as that in Antigua, Synod II., that there should be more industrial teaching; and that of the Bishop of Jamaica, that there should be more time given to the domestic arts for girls; and the same prelate's views that the Government was asking for too many subjects, and should provide better for bringing out children of special promise.

The Synods have boards or committees on education, and do not fail every year to consider its condition.

The Sunday School system is not quite so universally worked as in England. At home our Sunday Scholars are more numerous than our Day Scholars, about 2,870,000 to 2,100,000 in 1891, although there are many Nonconformist Sunday Schools in parishes where there is only a Church Day School. In the West Indies the majority is the other way, some

Digitized by Google

51,000 Sunday Scholars to 64,000 Day Scholars. The dioceses of Jamaica and Antigua have made Sunday Schools the parish rule, with the result that in the former the numbers are nearly equal, in the latter the Sunday Schools have the majority. Barbados is behindhand; the statistics given to the Provincial Synod show only 35 Sunday Schools to 150 Church Day Schools, 3000 scholars to 18,000. This is not as it should be when compared with the two dioceses above-mentioned. In Guiana, Trinidad, and Bahamas, the Sunday Scholars are less than half the Day Scholars. In these Colonies it is only fair to allow for the difficulties of distance and climate; the people of some education, who might furnish teachers, do not live near the church and school, and to teach in a Sunday School in a rural district would involve a separate journey from that of the family if before Mattins, or a special drive altogether if in the afternoon. And in these Colonies there is the feeling that the denominational system of week-day schools ensures regular religious instruction, and so renders Sunday Schools less imperative. In Jamaica, however, there is official insistence upon the Sunday Schools as the proper places for purely Church teaching. In the Government Schools of Jamaica, besides the teaching of Holy Scripture there is instruction in Morality.

The Jamaica Synod of 1897 discussed at length the whole situation, and decided to support the following proposals:—

> In Voluntary Schools—Scripture teaching to be included in the Inspector's examination, and not depreciated by any suspicion of secondary value in teachers' eyes; children to be excused attendance if desired; Special Denominational teaching not to be "inspected."

Digitized by Google

In Board Schools—Scripture teaching as above; denominational teaching by arrangement with the local managers.

The Synod ordered that Holy Scripture and the Apostles' Creed be taught in all Day Schools under its authority; but that teaching on the Sacraments, and the Prayer-Book, and on Church History, be left for the Sunday Schools.

The training of teachers has been a standing difficulty in these Colonies; but it is being surmounted. The early efforts in this direction of Principal Rawle were most vigorous and thoughtful, but he can hardly be said to have seen them bear much fruit, at least not until his latter days, when he returned to the scene of his educational labours to die. For a long time the schools were very much of the same character as the old Irish hedge schools. A master or mistress sat or stood in a room with a little crowd of children massed before him, not separated into classes, without books, pens, slates or pencils, and learning in flocks, so to speak, and, too often, wholly by rote. The Jamaica education grant of £3000 a year was for the first twenty-six years almost fruitless; for when Sir J. P. Grant arrived as Governor and inquired about education, it was found that all the schools were placed either in the lowest class allowed, or ticketed as having "failed" wholly to pass any reasonable test whatever. Barbados was favoured by the arrival of another ardent and experienced educationalist, when the Head-Master of the King's School, Canterbury, Dr. Mitchinson, went out as Bishop in 1873. His plan was to attach a Training Department to Codrington College, and as the Mission House there was larger than was ever required for purely Missionary Students, no expense for building seemed to be required. Accordingly some Government

Digitized by Google

Scholars were sent there, and the Trustees placed them under the Rev. Alban Wright, who went from lecturing at St. Mark's College, Chelsea, to be Chaplain of the Estates, and Tutor of this Department. But there was much to be said against this plan: the College stands remote from all centres of life, and the inclusion within its boundaries of a set of men with aims and habits different from those of the central body of students was not working well. Elevation of the humbler class was hoped for; deterioration of the higher appeared to be quite possible. When, therefore, the Mission House was destroyed by fire, 1885, there was no proposal to rebuild it, and the plan dropped. There should be a Training College in Barbados, with large Normal Schools, and therefore in Bridgetown; and the Church authorities would do good service in establishing one before the Government is obliged—as it will be—to set up one of the "Unsectarian" type.

Jamaica is well equipped now. There are several Colleges working on the basis of a Government grant of £25 a year for each student. The Church has its own College, the Moravians two (30 and 32), the Presbyterians one, the Government one, and there are the Mico (80) and Calabar Institutions (25). The latter, which is also the Baptist Theological College (see p. 181), is undenominational, so far as its Training Students are concerned. The Mico Institution is of some special interest. It was founded from a legacy of £1000 left for the benefit of Christian captives when the Moorish Pirates were a force on the seas. But the gift came late, and it lay unused. More fortunate than most unused charities, the fund was in safe keeping, and it was at length noticed that it had grown to £120,000! Sir Thomas Fowell Buxton, the Parliamentary successor of Wilberforce, was successful in securing the transfer of the whole sum for the

Digitized by Google

benefit of the slaves in the West Indies, at the time of emancipation, to be devoted to schools and training colleges. In religion it was, and is, undenominational. The zealous Archdeacon Trew was the first Superintendent; the present Secretary is a clergyman. Now that it has retired from St. Lucia by handing over its eleven schools to Government, in 1891, it has no schools, the Trustees holding that the local Legislatures are now awake to the need, and are ready to supply it. It expends its income on two Training Colleges in Jamaica and Antigua. Of the former the Bishop is Chairman, and a leading rector secretary; it has 80 students, 20 on the foundation, and 60 with Government allowances. In the Antigua College a lay Churchman is principal, and the training of Church teachers is left to its care: it was highly commended by Bishop Branch, and one of the Missionaries in the Pongas, now in Holy Orders, was a trained schoolmaster from the Antigua College. On the recent visit to the West Indies of Bishop Tugwell on the part of the Church Missionary Society, to inquire into the possibility of securing West Indians for service in West Africa, the Mico Trustees made a proposal to co-operate in the training.

Reviewing the educational field in the West Indies, it is plain that there is progress; these communities have made up their minds that education shall be open to all classes; and in carrying this out, the Denominational method is predominant. In producing this result the activity of Churchmen has been a leading factor, and the clergy have shown themselves interested and competent, and this not only in the general cause, but in the actual working and guidance of the Schools. The Diocesan Board of Jamaica recently sat twelve times to review the situation, and had the satisfaction of finding its proposals substantially accepted by the Government.

Digitized by Google

A word as to another reason for the generous recognition of the religious function in education in these islands on the part of the Legislatures. A little knowledge of the communities themselves shows that nowhere could the advocates of a purely secular system have so little chance of a hearing. In the education of the Negro it stands beyond chance of contradiction that what is most required of schools and colleges is the formation of "character." The well-known capricious bearing of Negro parents towards their children—as noted, for example, by Sir Louis de Verteuil (*Trinidad*, p. 13)—sometimes indulging them most foolishly, at others correcting them with brutality, renders the children "self-willed, impudent, and most disobedient," and hastening to quit their home as early in life as possible. Much, therefore, depends upon what is effected for the character at school. And then there is before every thoughtful resident's mind the distressing spectacle too often exhibited when in people of colour intellectual cleverness has been attained without any corresponding strengthening and refinement of the moral character.

NOTE.—The Colonial Office List gives the following particulars as to Elementary Education. The official wording is adhered to as closely as space permits.

Bahamas.—A Government system; local committees exercise local control only. Unsectarian Government Schools, 41; aided, 9; Church of England, 33; private, 29; total 112; scholars on the roll, 8593; grant not stated.

Barbados.—A Government system; central administration, and local control by the clergymen of the district (this includes Wesleyan and Moravian ministers), assisted by school committees. Schools, 189; scholars, 27,315; grant, £15,000.

British Guiana.—A State-aided system; the schools are denominational, except the Estate Schools (for Coolies); central control, local managers, who are usually ministers of religion. Schools, 209; scholars, 28,237; grant, £20,690.

British Honduras.—The schools are denominational, inspected

Digitized by Google

and aided by Government. Schools, 44; scholars, 3223; grant, $15,347.

Jamaica.—Elementary Education is left to private enterprise, aided since 1867 by a system of grants in aid. Schools, 932; scholars, 100,352; grant, £45,905.

Leeward Islands.—The system is denominational, with grants in aid, which are refused to superfluous or inefficient schools. Schools, about 125; scholars, 20,879; grant, not stated. (This statement omits to notice that the Dominica Schools are not all denominational.)

Trinidad.—The schools are of two kinds, secular and denominational. Schools, 187 (61 secular); scholars, 21,895 (6984 secular); grant, not stated. (Fees are exacted, twopence per week.)

Tobago.—Denominational. Schools, 24; scholars, 2300; grant, £600.

Windward Islands.—Government and denominational: viz. 16 and 101 (117); scholars, 17,080; grant, £5179. (Fees in Grenada.)

SOCIAL AND MORAL LIFE.

The most prominent question of social life in the West Indies is that of the relations of the Races. Mixture is proceeding, but slowly, the class of coloured people is increasing in numbers and in intelligence, and yet there is not anything that can be called absorption; indeed the whites are, naturally, in the orderly and recognized relationships of life at least, farther than ever from mixing with the humbler races here as in South Africa. But there should in any case be sought a spirit of mutual goodwill between the two races, and general respect for each other's "talent" in the present order of things; and this the Church is constantly fostering. With no abstract prejudice in her Gospel, which is neither for Jew nor Greek, as such; with no pressure on her conscience that it is committed to her to guide the working laws of racial difference by anything more definite than care that they are not a barrier to Gospel brother-

Digitized by Google

hood, she asserts spiritual equality, and leaves the relations of Race to work themselves out in the light of belief in a common destiny.

To the ranks of her ministry there is open access. Any special caution is based upon known weakness of stability in the lower race, and consequent necessity for longer proof of sincerity on the part of each individual before he is entrusted with grave responsibility. Just as the mixed race has an advantage in its unexplained immunity from several serious forms of disease, and can apply that advantage for its own benefit; so it is only common sense to recognize that they do not shine in endurance of purpose, but are prone to lives of ease and luxury. And the consideration of candidates for the ministry must take the disqualification into account just as it rejoices to give weight to the special advantage.

The prejudice felt against colour in high places is being quietly worn off in the offices and employments of the Church, but not very quickly; the preference for a white man as parish priest still prevails, and a parish considers itself under something of an indignity if one cannot be secured. Some ten years ago the Bishop of Barbados for the first time in the island history presented a coloured Curate to one of the eleven Rectories. A protest was at once raised. But the Bishop was firm, opposition soon died down, and the parish learned that it had gained an able priest. At Codrington College it has been an honourable distinction that the coloured students, though few, have learnt to feel at no disadvantage. In public worship in the churches there is, indeed, some keeping apart, but if this is looked into it will be found that it is social distinctions which are being observed, much as in an English parish church. No coloured man, much less a Negro, has yet become a British West Indian Bishop; but the majority of the Bishops have

Digitized by Google

come from England, and so long as men of the same stamp can be secured there is likely to be a preference for them, as there is for presidents of the Wesleyan Conferences or pastors of the chief Congregationalist churches or principals of Calabar College. In fact the number of coloured people whose education and attainments have placed them, man for man, on an equality with the white people is very small. And there is evidence that neither in these Colonies nor in the Southern States of America is there any genuine demand for an unlearned priesthood on the part of the people of colour. The education, the stability of character, the power of leading must come first. But when a generation shall have passed in which men of colour, and Negroes too, have acquired experience in the various offices and employments detailed in earlier pages, they, or at least their sons, will offer a growing source from which native clergy will more and more be drawn.

When we are thinking of Races of lower organization, perhaps the first question asked of religion by four people out of five is—How does it influence Family life? And especially, what is its effect in bringing the Family to the Christian type by means of the marriage of one man to one woman, and mutual fidelity to the vow? Other institutions and other virtues may to some appear of greater importance—sobriety, industry, or honesty. But Englishmen are fairly sure to look upon this as the foremost question.

It is just on this point that Churchmen in the West Indies cannot conceal feelings of bitter disappointment and ever-recurring regret. They know well that the redemption of the Negro in this respect is very far from being in an advanced stage. Allowing fully for such casual and individual lapses as are found also in English towns and villages, it is plain from the proportion of illegitimate births in the West

Digitized by Google

Indies that home-life after the Christian manner is not yet attained by the bulk of the Negro Race; for it the home built upon a lifelong pledge and a conjoined responsibility for children is not yet the rule.

It is not only that there is sad want of restraint on the part of the young, but also that libertinage, in the sense of numerous and brief attachments, marks the relationship of grown-up Negro men and women, in place of the single-hearted union to which the Church is bound to confine her blessing, and upon which civilization builds its hopes. Fair minds have always been ready to refer this to the recency of removal from African life, and to the wretched degradation of the Slavery period. And so it is that the Negro has not yet attained to the elevation of character necessary to sustain the higher order of family life. There is in him a reluctance to enter upon the pledge for life, born, in the case of the conscientious and religiously disposed, of self-distrust. Both men and women among them are aware of the difficulty of controlling fancy, and of the transitory character of most of their affections. And they shrink from the promise of constancy. With them it is the women as much as the men who are thus constituted; there is in the Negro race a nearer approach to equality between the sexes than is found in European races. The woman is almost as capable a breadwinner as the man; at any rate she can, in early and middle life, easily earn enough to keep a house for herself and two or three children; and not infrequently it is the woman whose affection cools or changes, and from whom arises the abandonment of the connection and the choice of another mate.

There are indeed numberless cases of lifelong attachments outside the bonds of marriage; in these, if only they could have known that they could be constant, they might have asked for the Christian rite.

Digitized by Google

In overcoming this reluctance to make the pledge of constancy even resort to the religious motive—cherished in other ways—has failed them. In Slavery days Mr. Pinder in his early labours on the Codrington Estates found the slaves docile and impressible in every way but this; he was pleased with their generosity, their affectionate regard for himself, their desire for all other religious ordinances; but on this he had to report—

"Although the marriage of slaves was a point which I had at heart from the first, and formed one of the early regulations, still none could be prevailed upon to marry according to the rites of the Church."

There will always be instability in Negro communities until this change is effected; an instability *within* the community. As Bishop Branch said in his first Charge, under the present lawlessness "Maternal feelings are blunted and paternal very often almost obliterated." And to this all Christian bodies have borne unwavering witness. No plea of adapting social system to Negro character has ever had recognition in their counsels. Even in slavery times the Nonconformist Missionaries worked hard for Marriage; the Church from the time when she began to be free to move has never ceased to put it in the forefront; and to-day it is a chief anxiety, and a permanent object of pastoral care.

Has any progress been made? At first after Emancipation many marriages were celebrated on the part of those who had been waiting, and hopes rose high. But when things settled down, it was seen that the influences noted were to operate for many years to come. The number of illegitimate births in these Colonies is considerably greater than the legitimate. In Jamaica the returns of 1885 were sixty per cent.; in Barbados 1891, 2847 legitimate to 4510 illegitimate; in Antigua in 1884 it was 837 legitimate to

Digitized by Google

1517 illegitimate: 1886, 892 to 1457: 1892, 813 to 1293; in Guiana 1889, 1327 to 2155. When allowance is made for the legitimate births of the White people, and for those of such coloured and Negro people as hold offices in the Church, or in other Christian bodies, the condition of the rank and file of the Negroes is distressing.

The Church has this ever in mind; chiefly and most effectively in her parochial and pastoral work. Church Discipline is invariably exercised when open breach is discovered; the Communion ticket is withdrawn until there is expression of repentance and sufficient time has elapsed to furnish evidence of its sincerity. This is acquiesced in by the offender, and approved by the people; to its operation we owe multitudes of cases of reform. In Windward Islands their first draft of Canons proposed that only a part of the Marriage Service should be used, and no bell or hymn allowed where there had previously been cohabitation; but on revisal this was not retained; nor was a provision for baptizing illegitimate children separately from legitimate.

There are in several dioceses Purity Societies or branches of the White Cross Army carefully endeavouring to promote elevation. In 1896 the Bishop of Jamaica called a Conference of twenty-four ministers of religion on "Moral teaching." The Synod of that year addressed itself to such practical measures as petitioning Government on the provision and inspection of the humbler class of dwelling-houses, especially in the direction of providing separate accommodation for the sexes; and on the more efficient registration of illegitimate children; on the employment of women in field-agriculture, and their lack of instruction in domestic arts, such as cooking and needlework, which enable a woman to make a home in which she finds her happiness so much involved that the vagaries of

Digitized by Google

the lower passions find a controlling influence, and the waywardness of affection receives a check.

Of the relations between white people and black people a much more cheerful account can be given. While there is some individual laxity, and the rejection in Jamaica of a Bill for registering fathers of illegitimate children along with the mothers has not a pleasant look, the general tone has completely changed. It is here as between the educated and the ignorant, the rich and the poor at home. Of this change a casual traveller is no competent judge. At the ports of the West Indies as of Europe there gathers a scum which is in no sense representative of the peasantry of the country. But in the villages the clergy and the catechists and the ministers and class-leaders can testify that in this respect the storm cloud has lifted from these communities within these last two generations.

Sabriety.—The Negro has not fallen so deeply into the vice of Intemperance as the working classes of England have done. In the Slavery times they had little opportunity; so no ill balance is carried over from them. Indeed, after Emancipation it was that a tendency to fall appeared. The Negro is considered by competent observers to be abstemious by natural disposition, and this is not enumerated among the vices most hindering Christian work, in the report of Bishop Tugwell or that of Dr. Barrett upon what they heard in Jamaica. Still, the Bishop of Jamaica's Conference of 1895 included it, and adopted petitions to the Legislature on the licensing laws.

Veracity.—There is large room for improvement in this virtue, as is always the case with a weaker race in social contact with a stronger; resort to "stratagems of helplessness," to use Bishop Thorold's phrase, is sure to be made. But whatever be the cause the Church will continue to work assiduously to remove it.

Digitized by Google

Steadiness, Perseverance.—Here again we find a lack, "a painful deficiency of sustained effort," as Dr. Barrett puts it. This, too, is racial character, and the replacement of individual fancy by Christian motive must be looked to as the remedy.

Industry.—Misconceptions on this point are rife. The Negro is commonly described as constitutionally indolent or lazy. Even Sir L. de Verteuil says that he is exceedingly indolent and ready to rely on others' work. But his vindication is not far to seek. Things are comparative: regard being had to the fewness of his pressing needs, to the ease of their satisfaction, and to the inherent difficulty of prolonged exertion in the tropics, we must be chary of admitting the applicability of a term of moral reprobation on this head. And in these days when opinion at home is setting in strongly against the ceaseless round of toil of the Factory *régime*, and the Eight Hours Day is becoming a fixed article in the Labour programme, the sympathy of workers will rather be with the Negro than against him, providing he keeps himself from pauperism —as he does. The value of leisure must be allowed even to him. In the Colonies where land was scarce, as Barbados, he has continued to be a trusty labourer. Often, indeed, he adopts the plan of energetically clearing off his work in the first three days of the week and reposing during the remainder, but there is nothing reprehensible in such an apportionment of toil, though it may be unwholesome or unwise. In other Colonies he has resorted to the cultivation of small holdings, in heartfelt hate of the old plantation driving. The fact is that the gross produce of these Colonies has been increased all along the line—by other means, of course, as well, but also not without some vigorous co-operation on the part of the labouring class. The Coolie population stands on a different footing, and no one has ever thought of accusing it

Digitized by Google

of labouring beneath its capacity, however modest that may be.

Thrift.—De Verteuil thinks the Negro improvident; but there is some development, as is seen in the Savings Bank returns; *e. g.* Jamaica, the 7970 depositors in 1881 had become 27,000 in 1896; Barbados, 4036 to 11,200 (amount £35,000 to £180,000); Antigua, 720 to 1790; St. Vincent, 640 to 1012; Nevis, 33 to 86. And Friendly Societies abound. Possibly a large part of this is due to the coloured people. Still, pauperism is not common; "real pauperism is hardly known in Jamaica," says Mr. Lucas.

Honesty.—Dr. Barrett's Congregationalist friends placed dishonesty, along with untruthfulness and impurity, as the three chief defects in the people as observed by them. And the daily doling out of household supplies to cook and "butler" in a West Indian household, with a similar proceeding for corn and fodder for the stable, is not a cheerful feature of West Indian domestic life. A still more serious offence is Predial larceny, *i. e.* robberies from gardens and fields. This is serious because of the open nature of these places, more especially on the smaller properties; expensive walls and gates are out of the question, and the injury arising from such larcenies falls most heavily on the labouring class. A rise in honesty could easily be demonstrated to be the best policy for them all, if such a mode of persuasion could be effective. The Bishop of Jamaica advocates the diminution of temptation by replacing "plots" at a distance by gardens surrounding the homesteads. Robbery with personal violence is very rare.

Personal offences.—Offences of a personal kind are due chiefly to the quarrelsome disposition of the Negro. Any attempted resort to the knife has to be sternly punished, as it is too frequent on the occasion

Digitized by Google

of the slightest misunderstanding. But deliberate assaults are rare, and murder very infrequent. In the crowded island of Barbados there was only one execution in seven years.

The magistrates' courts are fully occupied, but chiefly with very small offences. And some allowance must be made for a love of litigation on the part of the Negro. To his simple mind the pomp and ceremony of appearance in a law-court as prosecutor, witness, or even defendant, is a source of very considerable enjoyment.

Cheerfulness is everywhere recognized as a prominent quality of Negro character, even to exuberance. Unquestionably religious ritual should recognize this. Our Church has profited from such reflections on ritual as those of Long and Bridges, and the "Psalmody" of Bishop Coleridge is now added to by ample supply of hymnody and some ritualistic display.

Fortitude under suffering must also be allowed to him, especially after a preliminary outburst of expression has been allowed its course.

Devotion to a leader or an employer who has won his regard is another strong point with which all readers of the troubled times of West Indian history are familiar.

On these points of social and moral character the bearing of religious influence is close and direct, and the experienced clergy and lay-workers of the Church, along with the ministers, deacons, and class-leaders of the other Christian organizations, form the agencies to which we must look for effective progress. It is, however, usually thought that the Negro mind is of a compartmental order; it can hold in one part to religious profession, and in another to vicious practice to an extent quite inordinate and unlike what is true of the European mind. The Negro, it is said, will join vigorously in the hymns, say emphatic Amens to

Digitized by Google

the Prayers, and listen with rapt interest to the Sermon, and not the less for these things on his way home rob a garden, or quarrel violently with a companion. This must be allowed for; and so far as it is really prevalent the clergy are wide awake to it, and for this reason their pastoral work is pre-eminently practical.

Attention is assiduously paid to the necessity of giving religion its due practical force; and here it is that the primary importance of Church discipline stands out, and it is with this, combined with regular use of the offices of the Church, public worship included, that the pastoral care of West Indian clergy is largely occupied. Certain it is that the godless Negro, with mind wholly unmoved by religious motive, unoccupied with religious aspirations, and untrained by any religious discipline, is a lamentable object of pity. And the people of colour find the same necessity in an accentuated form; with mental abilities more acute the clever but unprincipled Mulatto is a still more forbidding character, acting as a beacon on the minds even of those outside Christian bodies against tampering with the institutions in which intellectual and moral training are never separated.

In 1895 the Bishop of Jamaica called a conference of the leaders of religious bodies at the suggestion of a retired Moravian minister. Presbyterians, Congregationalists, and Methodists met and united with the Church in adopting a circular letter to the congregations, and in setting apart a week (September 1896) for its public reading. The Romanists declined to join.

This chapter shows us that it is in no vaguely sentimental spirit that the West Indian Church proceeds with her task in shaping the character of the populations committed to her. Churchmen are con-

Digitized by Google

stantly called upon to be active in their civic capacities, as when the Bishop of Jamaica in his widely conceived address to Synod in 1897 included such problems as the housing of the poor among the subjects for consideration by this "religious" body. And in the variety of the agencies which her mind is now bringing to bear, the Church is seen to be very practical in her conception of godliness and of her own duty. Her sacramental system, as worked by diocesan and parochial and missionary agencies, is supplemented by societies for the special purposes of temperance and chastity, for the banding together of boys and girls, for protection of the poor and friendless. Agencies such as those found effective in guiding upward social and moral life in Great Britain and Ireland are being applied in those tropical countries. And the whole constitute on the part of the Church an impelling force towards the civilization and the evangelization of these communities.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII

SPECIAL TOPICS

The Coolie System—Responsibility of the Church—Efforts made—The Aboriginal inhabitants: In the Islands, in Guiana—Brett's Missionary Labours—Recent work—Work in Non-British Islands—Foreign Missionary Work: The Pongas Mission in W. Africa—Codrington College: Its Foundation and Early History; Re-constitution by Bishop Coleridge; Principal Rawle; Recent History—The Connection of W. Indian Church with English Church Societies: S.P.G., S.P.C.K., C.M.S., and Colonial and Continental—The New England Company—The Christian Faith Society, its origin and history—The Ladies' Negro Education Society.

THE COOLIES

Soon after emancipation the Sugar Colonies began to look elsewhere than to West Africa for a supply of the labour by tropical Races. No free Negro emigration from Africa seemed ever contemplated, a fact which shows pretty plainly the one-sided character of the Slave Trade so far at least as the wishes of Africans were concerned. In Jamaica the freed Negroes were resorting to peasant cultivation, and for the undeveloped lands of Guiana and Trinidad no labour was forthcoming at all. Our Colony of Mauritius was the first to look to India with its vast "coolies" (or labour) population. And for the West Indies the plan was largely due to a very capable Governor of Trinidad, Lord Harris, and a very able

Digitized by Google

Colonist, Charles Warner. Steps were soon taken in Guiana also, and to a small extent in Jamaica.

We need not here argue out the Coolie question, if it be a question any longer. Philanthropists were reasonably suspicious at the outset; jealous lest under a different name the old evils should be resumed with another race of people as the victims. And a somewhat excitable English writer, Ernest Jenkins, sometime member of Parliament for Dundee, went over, and on his return argued with violence against the system. But the British mind was reassured by the different report of so tried a friend of labour as "Parson Lot" (Charles Kingsley), who was thoroughly pleased with what he saw; and the Nonconformists could specially rely upon a similarly favourable one, given by the General Secretary of the Baptist Missionary Society, Dr. Underhill, when he visited the West Indies officially for that Society in 1862, after having been in India and seen native life there. Then there was further confidence arising from the fact that Guiana and Trinidad were both Crown Colonies, directly under control, and that Jamaica not long afterwards became so.

The vigilance and scruple had been of service. The Colonial Governments were obliged to see that in inviting systematic and State-aided immigration they were incurring a moral responsibility. No longer was the caprice of individuals to be the ruling force, but there was to be regulation throughout by the Government itself, it was to be *The Coolie System.* At the India end Guiana and Trinidad each support a Government Emigration Agent, and in each Colony there is a Department with a staff of inspectors and medical officers, the whole costing in Trinidad £65,000 a year; immigration from China is regulated by a convention between the Chinese Government and ours. The terms of indenture are a Government affair, as

Digitized by Google

are the quarters, the wages, the food, and the medical attendance. Under this scrupulous management there is no reason for supposing that the system is not a sagacious and beneficent industrial enterprise. In conception certainly it is economically sound. It relieves India of some surplus population and it supplies some countries which require labour and offer fertile soils with the necessary workpeople. They come over in sufficient numbers to maintain their own social institutions, taking up life again on their traditional basis. And they know that they are perfectly free to return when their indenture ends. Meanwhile some of them remit to India their savings (from Trinidad in 1894 £11,663). The returns show in Guiana under indenture 20,000; on plantations, but no longer under indenture, 35,000; no longer on estates, but engaged in small industries, 43,000; total 98,000, which with 16,000 Chinese makes up 40 per cent. of the population of the Colony. In Trinidad in 1895 there were 84,000, 30 per cent. of the population. In Jamaica this immigration assumes a different character, and is open to grave question. There can be no plea of insufficiency of working-people, and the Coolie is only resorted to for the maintenance of plantation labour. In fact, the immigration was suspended in 1886, but it was resumed in 1891, and the Department is still retained; the total number in the Colony in 1893 was 13,000 only.

From the point of view of religion the system has brought a very serious addition to the responsibilities of the Church. Their situation is not, of course, the same as that of the old Slaves; the Coolies are not removed from their own forms of social and religious life. In their villages they enjoy freedom of religious observance, and even on the melancholy occasion in Trinidad, when life was lost in the suppression of a Mohammedan festival, the blunder was caused only by

Digitized by Google

the officials thinking it necessary in the interests of public order that such celebrations should be confined to the villages and not take place in streets and public places. Our relation to them is, therefore, not different from what it is to the population of India. But their presence constitutes an opportunity; here are Hindus and Mohammedans brought away from their ancient temples and mosques, and possibly therefore more open to evangelical work; here they no longer form the mass of the people with Christians as the strangers, but they are aware that they are the visitors in Christian countries. The Church authorities took full note of this. Great and varied as were their existing responsibilities and gravely as they regarded this addition—"a slice of somebody else's mission-field floated to our shores," as Bishop Rawle said,—in Guiana Bishop Austin and Mr. Brett at once endeavoured to secure some Christian teaching for them. An important step was taken when a leading West India merchant, Mr. Quentin Hogg, well known in London as founder of the first great Polytechnic, founded a Mission station on his estate at Bel Air. Other laymen subscribe to the Bishop's fund, the S.P.G. give a grant, and the Government allow the Bishop £600 a year for this purpose. Three Missionaries and ten catechists are at work in seven mission centres, and there are five students at the college. On some estates the proprietors have given to the clergy the appointment of teachers and the oversight and management of the estate schools.

In Trinidad the local Association of the S.P.G. at once appealed to the Colonists. "By immigration properly conducted," they said, "that is to say on Christian principles and in a Christian spirit, Trinidad may be a *Missionary Country*, an asylum as it were to multitudes from the darkness and misery of heathenism; a centre from which light may radiate

Digitized by Google

upon them, and from them perhaps be reflected upon their native lands."

Bishop Rawle secured a Missionary from Chota Nagpore, who began well, but failed in health, after which the work languished; on the arrival of Bishop Hayes in 1889 it at once revived. He has had the advantage of the co-operation of an experienced English clergyman, Canon Trotter, who resigned the important vicarage of Alnwick to go out to his assistance, and now in season and out of season works for these mission stations and schools. Catechists are employed, estates are visited, schools and orphanages opened. The special need as expressed by the Bishop was for a Hindu priest to be at the head of the work, and in 1896 he reports that he has secured one who is now at work. The Presbyterians of Nova Scotia also have mission schools for Coolies in the islands. In Jamaica the Home and Foreign Missionary Society has set apart £150 a year for Coolie work, distributed in various grants; there are about 12,000 Coolies in the Colony.

There is certain advantage in the immigrants being of low caste, or of no caste at all. But a great obstacle is felt in the variety of the regions from which they are drawn, causing them to be exceedingly varied in tradition, languages, and religion. Afghans, Nepaulese, and Madrassees are all found; the bulk now come from the "North West Province." As was previously mentioned, in the Mission College no two of the five students could work together. The fact that many return home has two sides; it renders them more difficult of impression; but in the cases where an impression is made, opportunity for carrying it back to India opens out.

The Chinese immigration is not extensive; in Guiana they numbered 3714, and they soon become store-keepers. When they first arrived Bishop Austin

Digitized by Google

wisely persuaded the Government not to scatter them, and in this way approach to them was rendered more easy. The Chinese have responded much more than they do in China; they have built chapels, and catechists' houses, and "they make model Christians," says a rector in whose parish a body of them reside. "Bright, intelligent, liberal-minded, self-denying," says the present Primate. And the possibility of far-reaching effect is illustrated in a gratifying manner by the report of one of our clergy in Hong Kong, that "one of the best catechists there is a Chinese who had been instructed in the Church Missions in Guiana."

A Guiana rector records a Harvest Festival Service in which the English clergyman was assisted by a Chinese catechist and a Hindu catechist, a Chinaman was at the harmonium, and the hymns and chanting were, simultaneously, in three different languages.

THE ABORIGINAL INHABITANTS

The occupation of America by the aborigines whom we found there is now referred to the Age of Stone. *Homo Americus* had branched off from *Homo Mongolicus* in that early period, and whatever culture was found was of indigenous growth save what was common to the Mongolic race in the period before metals came into use. They are of a coppery brown colour, with hair straight and black; and we found many grades of social progress, from the savages of the Brazil forests to the city dwellers of Mexico and Peru, of Yucatan and the plateaux of the Andes.

Those who inhabited the islands and the N.E. coast of South America belong to what is best known as the Carib family.

(i.) *Aborigines of the Islands.*—The sweeping away of the Aborigines from the larger Islands by the Spaniards is one of the most terrible phenomena of

Digitized by Google

the history of European expansion. In Jamaica, for example, we found none. But there were two groups on islands now occupied by us—one of milder nature in the Leewards, and a fiercer tribe on the Windwards. Hunters and fishermen, living much on the sea, expert in canoes, and given to cannibalism; this is the race through whom every schoolboy is introduced to savage life in *Robinson Crusoe*. Their presence in the early stages of our settlements is not sufficiently remembered now, perhaps because these were absent from Barbados as well as from Jamaica. But the history of Antigua, St. Kitts, and St. Vincent was much affected by them; a spirit of unrest and of dissimilarity from England was kept up in the colonists. Our first settlement in St. Lucia was effectively expelled by them (1641). Here as in other places the French were more acceptable to them. Once the French and ourselves agreed to leave St. Vincent and Dominica to them (1660), and they were to help us elsewhere. In 1674 the Antigua settlers were so much harassed by incursions from Dominica that they sent an expedition under Warner, son of the Governor, who had to oppose Caribs headed by his own half-brother. In Grenada a French official roused hostility and a war of extermination set in there; and the Caribs were driven into the sea from a hill still named "Morne des Sauteurs!" In St. Vincent there are both yellow and black Caribs, the latter partially descended from shipwrecked negroes; these prevailed over the others, and afterwards resisted the English; when we took over the island in 1763, we had to send troops from North America, and allotted the Caribs some "reserves." There are only about 200 there now; some were deported later on, like the Maroons of Jamaica, to an island in the Bay of Honduras: they have since been removed to the mainland and number about 2000. In Dominica there are perhaps 300 in the forests on the N.E. side.

Digitized by Google

In Trinidad, 1082 at the capitulation of the island have declined to less than 100; their women were appropriated by both whites and Negroes, so that there is a strain of their blood in that island, though they themselves have almost gone. A few with some Spanish blood linger in the Virgin islands. Tobago, the veritable Crusoe island, has none. Those in St. Vincent are Christians, both yellow and black, forming a district in the parish of St. Patrick; those in Honduras have attention from our Church. The other fragments seem to be fading quietly out of existence beyond reach; much as the gipsies of England. It is thought that many really got away to the mainland from these islands of ours; if so, the history of the race, so far as British influence is concerned, has been not one of extermination, nor even of crushing slowly out, but of displacement to wider forests and broader rivers on the Main. This had been effected before the Church awoke; since then, as we have been led to extend our Colonial empire to Guiana, we have had work to do among the Carib race and have done it.

(ii.) *On the mainland*, i. e. *for us, Guiana.*—The family here is composed of four different tribes, known as Arawaks, Acawaios, Waraus, and Caribs proper; each has its dialect, and they do not at all associate freely. Their occupations are chiefly fishing, growing cassava for the cakes which constitute their "staff of life," weaving baskets and hammocks (at once their bed and chair), spinning cotton, and making simple pottery. But slight clothing is needed, although now, through the growing resort to markets on the coast for the sale of their produce, they are beginning to wear European woven cloths, and in more abundant quantity; somewhat to the detriment of the older people, at least, as these cannot get into the habit of changing their dress when wet.

Digitized by Google

In character they are phlegmatic; their demeanour is impressive, and they have something of the Mongolian wariness. They are capable of great self-control; enduring, for instance, the rubbing of red pepper into their eyes before they shoot a rapid, as a propitiation to the local spirit; a ceremony so painful that the younger men cannot quite repress a sobbing, although the full-grown endure it without a sound. And yet they have a childish sense of fun. Mr. Brett records their boyish glee when a Warau sitting on his heels in church rolled over and cannoning against the others caused a general downfall; so hilarious was the party that there was nothing for it but for all to get up and leave the chapel. Remembering Humboldt's opinion of the gravity of manner and general look of sadness of these very tribes, the historian feels some relief at an incident like this, as an insight into a brighter region of their character. Those in the Pomeroon district are the wildest; the Acawaios of the Potaro, Pierce described, after living for six weeks in the midst of a camp of 1200 of them cooped up like bees in a hive, as "honest to an extraordinary degree, pure in morals and modest in demeanour, perfectly good-humoured, kind and gentle in mind and manner." In some districts their vigour was such as to cause them to be employed by the Dutch against the escaped Negroes. They are far from being numerous within our territory; indeed estimates vary from 7000 to 50,000; but this is partly because some are speaking only of the settled part of the Colony. The Colonial Office List for 1897 says 17,000; but only 7000 were enumerated in the census of 1891 in the settled districts.

Considering the difficult character of the work already in hand in Guiana, the judgment of history could hardly have been severe if the Church in those days had not seen its way to following these wild people up their rivers and swamps. But they were

Digitized by Google

brought by Providence to the notice of men who could not do otherwise than move in their behalf. The first Bishop when Guiana was part of the extensive diocese of Barbados, Coleridge, did not fail to initiate action; assisted by his Archdeacon Austin, afterwards himself to be Bishop, and a rector, Duke, of Holy Trinity parish, adjacent to the N.W. district. But there had already been some attempts in another part of the Colony towards what is now Dutch Guiana. In the Berbice district the Moravians had a mission from 1738 to 1812, when it was destroyed by Bush Negroes and never renewed. The Church Missionary Society sent out two Missionaries to the Essequibo district, but the Brazilian neighbours interfered; twice they expelled Mr. Youd, and finally he was poisoned by a sorcerer, and his successor died of fever. So the mission "suddenly collapsed." It had never been successful; it was always in leading strings, and there was an error of policy in admitting half-breeds to squat on the Mission lands, as these repelled the Indians. In later times the remnants of this early work were gathered together, and now the Essequibo Mission forms an important link with the others.

The present Missions date from an act of Bishop Coleridge. Within four years of his arrival in the West Indies he took up the case of the River Indians of Guiana, by sending Mr. Pinder to report on them. When the three Colonies were united, the Bishop visited them and included in his inspection some of the great rivers (1839). In 1840 at his instance the S.P.G. sent out a clergyman and a catechist. The latter was destined to be the great benefactor of these tribes; and to leave a name of distinguished honour in Missionary history. William Henry Brett proved to be singularly gifted for Missionary work; his religion was lucid in its simplicity and complete in its hold upon his character, his patience was without

Digitized by Google

limit, his powers of organization unusual; supported as he was by his Bishop, Archdeacon, and rector, the plans and execution were all his own. His intellectual abilities were precisely what were required for a Missionary pioneer; though without Grammar School education he had a forcible style of his own, was able to read Latin and Greek for his own edification, and to take interest in Spanish, Portuguese and French, and so to be in contact with the nations across the border of his district. He was able to reduce to writing all the four dialects of the three tribes with which he was concerned. He was himself another of the results of the memorable Missionary influence which commenced with David Brainerd and passed to Henry Martyn, as he himself narrated, and he was physically endowed sufficiently to endure forty years of energetic life in a tropical country, breaking down however at the close, and ending his days in considerable bodily suffering. That Christian humility which penetrates true Christian workers was strikingly exemplified in the man who in his last illness, after his forty years of toil, was overheard to murmur as his closing petition, "Gentle Saviour, pass me not by."

On the arrival of these two the clergyman was at once struck down with fever and ordered home again. The young catechist had to make his choice of a course, and he decided to go up the rivers. He was directed to go to "The Wild Coast," between the Essequibo and Orinoco, towards that region which has so long been the subject of dispute between Venezuela and Great Britain. Here the rivers are still the roads and the Indian tracks the only means of cross-communication.

For a long time he was alone under the roof of an old Negro woman, who had occupied a deserted cabin on the river bank. The Indians kept aloof and shot by in their canoes if they saw him approach them.

Digitized by Google

The change began with the visit of a remarkable man, an Arawak chief who had travelled over the whole of that region and had seen something of Christianity in the coast towns, although it could not by any possibility have been much. This man attached himself to Brett, was baptized with the name of the first Gentile convert, and for no less than twenty-eight years was his right hand, dying in full faith and charging his sons to continue to be loyal and active Christians. From the influence of Cornelius the work began, and it went on continuously. Brett lived in the river districts (with a wife in later years) for a long period, and then was appointed rector of Holy Trinity, the adjacent parish, and so kept them still under his supervision. Little congregations were formed, not always continuous ones, but assemblies for a period, breaking up as the various avocations of the seasons required; and schools somewhat similarly. Tribal prejudices were broken down, insomuch that at Holy Communion members of all tribes gathered together, who would not consent to meet for any secular purpose. And is there anywhere a more touching instance of the universal brotherhood of Christians than that of the poor Waraus and Arawaks of this Wild Coast appearing as contributors to the Irish Famine Fund of 1847? A contemporary, McClintock, the Postholder or stipendiary Magistrate of the district, wrote—"When I first arrived in this district, a more disorderly people than the present Arawaks could not be found in any part of the province; murders and violent cases of assaults were of frequent occurrence. But now the case is reversed, no outrage of any description ever happens; they attend Divine service, their children are educated, they themselves dress neatly, are lawfully married, and as a body there are no people, in point of general good conduct, to surpass them. This change, which has caused peace and contentment to

Digitized by Google

prevail, was brought about solely through the missionary labour."

With so striking a testimony before us it is useful to know Brett's method. His "body of divinity" for missionary purposes was composed of St. Matthew's Gospel, the Creed, Lord's Prayer, and Commandments, with two sets of original questions and answers on the Creed and Sacraments, simple and brief. These he translated into dialect, and the S.P.C.K. printed them for him. As time went on he added portions of the Bible and of the Prayer-Book, and wrote out a larger Catechism. He was a thorough believer in pictures, and got the same Society to print some little engravings round his printed cards. His translation work was done very largely by the help of Cornelius' wife, Wilhelmina, who often was able to supply him with words when his male assistants failed; and he refers with quiet humour to a "Translation Committee," composed of two Arawaks who spoke Warau, two Caribs similarly qualified, and two young Waraus. "To these was added the old Warau chief, who was dull and could not construe a sentence; but his presence gave importance to the work, and was supposed by his people somehow to ensure its correctness."

On this noble man the title of "The Apostle of the Indians of Guiana" was conferred by popular speech throughout the Colony, and as such it will go down in Missionary history. The race for which he laboured was one which will never be large or important; but the quality of the work and the worker are a possession of the West Indian Church for ever.

During the forty years of Brett's labours, and inspired by his success, fresh stations were being opened out up other rivers. In these the industrial element was always a feature, in the shape of gardening and carpentering with boat-building (as distinct from

Digitized by Google

hollowing out canoes). The carpenters' shop of St. Augustine's, Canterbury, enabled many a Missionary to be an accomplished industrial manager: such as Heard, F. L. Quick, T. E. Quick, and G. W. Matthews.

The Pomeroon Mission is the oldest of all; that of the Potaro the newest. It was in this latter river that a terrible catastrophe saddened the story of Guiana missions. William Edward Pierce, a Cambridge man who relinquished a Jamaica parish for this outpost work, and a man of great promise, was returning with his family from a visit to this mission when his boat was capsized in a rapid, and, though the boatmen were all able to save themselves, he was drowned with his wife and three out of his four children. This was before he had completed a single year of work (1881). "Who knows whether life is not death, and dying the real life?" was the question of Euripides found written out in Pierce's note-book.

The rivers Demerara, Berbice, Essequibo, Mazzaruni, and Corentyn all have their stations now, one of them on the site of the old Moravian endeavour. The regular clergy of the Colony have been assiduous in their encouragement of the Indian work: to such as Duke, Bernan, the Austins, Butt, May, and Farrar much is owed, and some of them have been able to help by reason of their having previously served up the rivers themselves, as Veness and Gwyther. The Bishop reported in 1896 that he had received an offer from two American clergy to go there: but at the time of his writing this there were no funds available for a new departure.

Some change in the condition of the Indians is contemplated by those resident in the Colony: they are likely to come more and more into contact with the white men as the latter explore farther, and as they themselves learn to work more for the coast-town markets. The impression of Christian teaching and

Digitized by Google

training upon them now is all the more urgent, and the steady maintenance of this Missionary work becomes the more imperative. The Missions would be greatly assisted if each one possessed a steam launch : much valuable time would be saved and the range of each Missionary's operations much enlarged.

WORK ON NON-BRITISH ISLANDS, AND ON THE ADJACENT CONTINENT

But little energy is yet to spare for going afield, and at such a cost of time and money as West Indian travelling requires. To go to Cuba from Jamaica in ordinary course it is easiest to go round by New York! What has been done in these quarters has been to form congregations in such places as there seemed to be a nucleus of English life. We have not attempted to displace the Church of Rome with regard to the populations as a whole.

The great island of Cuba is, in this way, cared for from the U.S.A. under the Bishop of Florida. In the Republic of Hayti there is an independent Church; American Bishops had visited the island, and in 1870 Bishop Spencer of Jamaica joined with them in consecrating a Negro priest as Bishop, J. L. Holly, who is still officiating there. There are some dozen clergy, nearly twenty congregations and as many mission stations.

The Republic of San Domingo is occasionally visited by us from Turks Islands. On Porto Rico (Spanish) we have a congregation, and another on Viecques Island close by; these have two clergy (one black), and are under the Bishop of Antigua, who is assisted by the Colonial and Continental Society with grants.

To Martinique and Guadeloupe we have not found occasion to send clergy; but we have one on the

Digitized by Google

French island of St. Bart's, who receives £40 a year and £20 for a house from the French Government. On the Dutch island of Saba there is a congregation.

In the Danish islands St. Thomas and St. Croix there is a goodly proportion of English Church-people: St. Thomas being a cosmopolitan resort, and, in fact, the chief depôt of the Royal Mail Packet Company. Our people are returned as 3200 out of 12,000 in the capital of St. Thomas, and 4000 out of 10,000 in Saba. The chaplain at St. Thomas receives an allowance from the Danish Government, and also from our Foreign Office as Consular-Chaplain; the present Chaplain is Archdeacon of the Virgin Islands (dio. Antigua).

On the continent there have long been some coast stations superintended from Jamaica; their existence was one ground for forming the diocese of British Honduras, which has, of course, taken them over. If any stations should be placed in Venezuela they would be directed from Trinidad, and any in French or Dutch Guiana from our own division of that region.

FOREIGN MISSIONARY WORK

Soon after the Church settled down to work, the evangelization of heathen peoples began to be presented to the congregations as an indispensable part of Christian duty. What was done at first was to form local Associations, in connection chiefly with the S.P.G., the Society which had been the chief agency in helping the West Indian Church after emancipation. The S.P.C.K., the C.M.S., and the Bible Society were similarly represented in some Colonies. Small contributions to these societies were sent up from year to year; and this is done still, to a small extent: *e.g.* the Jamaica Home and Foreign Missionary Society

Digitized by Google

sent in 1896 to West Africa Mission £60, C.M.S. £35, S.P.G. £25; in 1897 £100, £20, and £20 respectively. The Synod of Antigua soon after formation ordered an annual collection for Foreign Missions, and intercession services, in the Octave of St. Andrew.

But the chief field of heathenism to which these Churches have looked is naturally West Africa. Their work here requires a connected narrative of its own.

THE PONGAS MISSION

The idea of turning the growth of the West Indian Church to the advantage of West Africa may have occurred to more than one West Indian. Certainly both Archdeacon Trew, of the Bahamas, and Bishop Parry, of Barbados, had entertained it. But it first took effectual form in the ardent mind of Principal Rawle. From his windows at Codrington he looked over the Atlantic, and the thought of causing the enslavement of the Guinea Negro to be like the carrying of Joseph into Egypt, a means of benefiting the family, grew upon him: wholly congenial, too, as it was with the missionary purpose of the College itself. At a meeting in Bridgetown in 1850 he broached the idea, and in 1851 an Association was founded. It was to be in connection with S.P.G. as trustees of the College, and the principal adapted a portion of his Lodge for the reception of students, to be specially trained.

It was four years before a Missionary was secured, when Hamble Leacock, a Barbadian clergyman of long standing, saying—"The Church calls and some one must answer," went out in 1855 with Duport, a coloured student, who had been a mechanic. The region selected was the country around the estuaries of the Pongo river, about 130 miles north of Sierra Leone: a district from which many a slave-ship had secured a cargo in the days gone by.

Digitized by Google

When the Chief of Fallangia, who had spent some time in England twenty years before, heard that a Missionary had come he sent for him and received him with great emotion, and the first station was at once founded. But the climate was too trying for a man of Leacock's years, and he succumbed before the close of 1856, the first "Martyr of the Pongas." Duport was left alone for a time, but before 1860 two other white men had gone out and died there, Neville and Dean. Coloured students were supplied from time to time from the West Indies continuously; amongst whom were several men of great ability, notably Duport who died there after eighteen years' work; Rev. P. H. Doughlin (now of Trinidad) who served for nineteen years; and the present Superintendent, Rev. J. B. McEwen, who has been there twenty-six years. Since 1864 the Missionaries have all been men of colour. At the stations of Fallangia, Domingia, Isles de Los (a kind of Sanatorium for the Mission, with a boarding-school), and Farringia, thorough Church work has been organized; in 1887 a new station was opened further inland at Bramaia, in 1890 another at Cassa; the last opened was at Kambia, further south and within British territory, in 1895. A notable conversion took place in 1878, when Mrs. Lightburn, a great "lady chief" (a Negress), and the principal slave-dealer of the district, opened her house for services and, later on, was baptized. In 1896 three fresh students left the West Indies for the Pongas country, and the Mission at the end of that year consisted of three ordained Missionaries with seven assistants, working at eight chief stations.

The West Indian Churches have supplied the bulk of the funds, and Barbados was for some time the seat of administration. But an assisting committee had been formed in England which raised supplementary funds, notably from Clifton; and S.P.G. contributed

Digitized by Google

to the stipends. Owing to certain difficulties the control was transferred in 1886 to the English Committee in consultation with the authorities in the West Indies. The Mission has exercised a very beneficial reflex effect on the West Indian churches themselves. Missionary meetings addressed from time to time by workers from the Pongas have kept the congregations in close contact with the great needs of Africa.

Besides purely Evangelistic work the little band of Pongas missionaries have been enabled to aid the progress of the Susu people in the Pongas in most important ways: the extinction of the Foreign slave trade in one of its chief strongholds; the mitigation of domestic slavery; the opening of the rivers to trade; and the improvement in dwellings, and in methods of cultivating the soil.

At the close of 1897, however, the friends of this Mission find themselves in face of a crisis, arising from two causes. First, a large portion of the district has been definitively included in French territory. This means that the Government influence is now wholly on the side of French missions (whether Roman or Protestant); the French language, for example, is compulsory in all aided day schools. No open opposition takes place, of course, but in a backward country it is a serious thing to feel that the Government influence is undisguisedly in favour of other efforts than ours. This quite precludes the idea of our extending the Mission in the old region; for fresh work we must turn rather to the hinterland of our own territories, as was done when the station was opened at Kambia.

Secondly, the grievous depression in the West Indies is diminishing the number of parishes which can support their own ministrations, and colonies which have to apply for replacement on the list of

Digitized by Google

English Missionary Societies themselves cannot continue the substantial contributions to African work hitherto received.

The Committee, therefore, is considering whether the whole Mission may not have to be attached to the diocese of Sierra Leone as the primary source of funds and the seat of control. The new Bishop, Dr. Taylor Smith, has gone to his diocese with this possibility under careful consideration. But it is intended that, in any case, the connection with the West Indian churches be maintained, as to the supply of men and their training. However depressed the West Indies may become the religious atmosphere ought not to be affected, and the very fact of industrial stress in the islands may lead to some emigration, a part of which would, we trust, be emigration of Christian young men ready for Missionary work in Africa.

In this connection it should be noticed that the Church Missionary Society, which is so largely committed to West Africa, has recently given its attention to the West Indies as a possible source of Missionary supply.

In 1895 Dr. Ingham, when Bishop of Sierra Leone, visited Jamaica for the express purpose of inquiring into this possibility; and in 1897 Bishop Tugwell, of Western Equatorial Africa, and Mr. Wilkinson, one of the C.M.S. secretaries, went over to Jamaica and a four days' Missionary Conference was held at Kingston; their report (*C.M.S. Intelligencer*, April 1897) is of a general character, but it concludes with an expression of belief that the proposal for selecting and training young men is a workable one, and should be pushed forward. Their visit was confined to Jamaica, through lack of time to go farther.

Thus a century which began with the Slave Trade still in operation (to 1807) and yearly conveying thousands of Africans to servitude, whilst denying

Digitized by Google

them access to our churches, is closing with conferences and meetings upon the ways and means of engaging the children of Negro freemen as messengers of the Gospel to the regions where their ancestral tribes are raising their heads and asking to share in civilization and enlightenment and in Christian privilege.

CODRINGTON COLLEGE, BARBADOS

On the walls of the house of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Westminster is a board which records the chief benefactions for the work of the Society received during the very nearly two centuries of its existence. Of the two most munificent gifts, the first comes near the beginning, the other at the close of this period—the Codrington bequest in 1710, and the Marriott bequest in 1897. The former consisted of a mansion in the West Indies with two fine estates then worth £2000 a year, in full working order. The purpose was laid down in the Trust-deeds; it was education, religious education, in our then new colonies in the Caribbean Sea.

Splendid as was the gift, its nobility was enhanced by the character of the donor. Christopher Codrington was a native of the Colony of Barbados, son of the Captain-General of the Leeward Islands. He studied with distinction at Oxford, where he was a Fellow of All Souls', the College which shared his thought when distributing his property, by receiving the endowment for its Library: in its Chapel he was buried. He left Oxford for the Army, was colonel of the First Foot Guards, and served in Flanders. But ere long he went over to the West Indies, and succeeded his father in the governorship of the Leeward Islands. Planning an attack on Guadeloupe which miscarried, the soldier-student indulged his

Digitized by Google

original bent for study by retiring to his estates in Barbados, to study theology and metaphysics. Here he died on Good Friday, 1710.

His Will conveyed the mansion and estates to the newly-formed Propagation Society, to found a College "for the use of the Mission in those parts of the British dominions, which should be a nursery for the propagation of the Gospel, providing a never-failing supply of labourers into the harvest of God."

The Society gratefully accepted the Trust, and began erecting College buildings near the mansion in 1716; some litigation with the heir led to delay, and it was 1743 before the buildings were finished. Unfortunately the architect employed had no instructions to prepare a design for the tropics, and the range of buildings, although dignified, would have been more in place at All Souls'.

In the conception of a Colonial College Codrington, like his successors the great Bishops Berkeley and Wilson, was ahead of the possibilities of his time. No young men were forthcoming as students, and the Society avoided appointing Professors, but at once despatched a clergyman as Chaplain and catechist to the Estates. For a time the buildings were employed as a Grammar School. But the great hurricane of 1780 nearly destroyed them, and the school was suspended. The estates were ill-managed, and all was very gloomy when a second benefactor arose in the person of a planter, who undertook to lease the estates and pay £500 a year; but in the course of ten years he handed to the Society £12,000 more, and they ordered the name of John Brathwaite to be enrolled as a benefactor to that amount. The school was reopened in 1797, and for thirty years was of considerable service to that Colony: not to all the West Indies, be it observed: amongst its "Presidents" was Samuel Hinds, D.D., afterwards Bishop of Norwich. Part

Digitized by Google

of the funds was employed in sending out boys to England for medical or legal education.

During all this period the estates were being worked as Codrington intended, as sugar-estates on the usual lines of slave labour; there were 315 Negroes on the estates when handed over. The question at once arises, in some minds, why did not the Society liberate the slaves? Indeed, we have seen the fact that it retained these very estates quoted as a standing proof that Church ideas, even in England, were never opposed to Slavery. But first, it is to be noted that it was a condition of the Will that the estates were to be so continued. It was the legal system of the Colony, and Codrington would have manumitted them himself had he desired to protest against the system. And it is to be remembered also that the piety of the Moravian Brethren, dissociated as it was from all political alliances, did not preclude them from holding slaves in their missionary stations in the West Indian island of St. Thomas. Bishop Fleetwood of St. Asaph, in a sermon before the Society, expressed the prevalent view when he said that the Society's business was to treat the slaves well, not to free them. The Society all along regarded it as its peculiar and honourable responsibility to work these estates as models; to be in the van in every improvement of the condition of the labouring classes which did not involve social revolution, and especially to strike out a new line with regard to their religious instruction. They employed a Chaplain, either solely or one of the masters of the Grammar School, and a schoolmaster or mistress, or both, for the Negro children. In 1825 the two estate schools were the only ones reported to Government as existing on the island. The management of the estates was on lines laid down from home, such as, that the slaves should be invited to service in the Society's Chapel; that not

Digitized by Google

only should no Sunday labour be exacted, but that half of Saturday should be theirs for their own food-growing. There were Sunday Schools for children, and adults too; Baptism and Holy Communion were open to them, and burials with Christian rites, with leave to attend on the part of relatives. Marriage was encouraged (although in 1822 there was but one married couple there), and a hospital opened. Further, no slaves were sold off the estates, and very seldom were any bought; the "hard" system was not allowed.

At the same time it is open to Churchmen to wish that a still stronger line had been taken, if not at once, at least some time before Emancipation was forced on the Colonies from England. If Bishop Wilfrid on receiving an estate with 250 slaves could emancipate them on religious grounds A.D. 670, it was retrograde of the S.P.G. as a religious Society in 1710 to accept the Trust; and it may be taken as an illustration of how far from uniform has been the flow of social progress, even within the Christian Church.

In 1833 the Trust received as "Slave-Compensation" £8823 8*s.* 9*d.*; a sum which was at once invested as a reserve, and to this day part of it appears in the list of funds administered by the Society under the item, "Codrington estates, Slave compensation, £5880," with a net income of £356, which may be said to be the sum still expended annually in the support of chaplain, the chapel, and the schools attached to the estates.

The use of the funds for a Grammar School for the sons of the upper class in Barbados was in no sense in the spirit of the Trust, although in the 18th century no other employment seemed to open out. But among the reforms due to the new Bishop, Coleridge (1824), was that of a scheme in accordance with the foundation; and in 1830 the history of the College in the proper sense commences. The income at that

Digitized by Google

time was £2500, and this admitted of a Grammar School being opened at the "Lodge," a mile from the College, as a feeder.

The Bishop was extremely happy in having a gifted man ready to be the first Principal. John Hothersall Pinder was of West Indian family; he had been chaplain to the estates, and afterwards the Bishop's Commissary in Guiana. He began his new work by receiving a few students at a house in Bridgetown; in 1831 he took up residence in the College, on the windward side of the island, where the Principal's Lodge is the old mansion-house; and the College was publicly opened by the Governor. At the opening there were 16 Divinity students, 1 medical, 1 law, and 25 boys in the Grammar School. Here for ten years Mr. Pinder conducted the training of candidates for holy orders, just as the need for their increase was being accentuated by emancipation. In 1835 he retired, but it was to resume similar work in England with even more conspicuous success; for it was Pinder who, as Principal of the new theological college for graduates of Oxford and Cambridge at Wells, made the college such a success as to encourage the system and give rise to many other colleges since. Here some 600 graduates passed under his instruction, and carried his name far and wide in honour.

Bishop Coleridge met with much opposition from within Barbados itself: there was in the Colony, and is still, an invincible conviction that the benefits of the foundation belong primarily to that island, ignoring the fundamental idea that the property was devised away from theCodrington family for no less a purpose than the welfare of the West Indian group of colonies at large. Even Sir R. Schomburgk, the historian of Barbados, judicious as he usually is, thought the change unwise; but later on he came round to acknowledge that the Bishop and the S.P.G.

Digitized by Google

were right. One of the Principals of the College afterwards stated that up to 1829 only one parochial clergyman had been given to the West Indies by the foundation. If so, it was time to recast it indeed. On Mr. Pinder's retirement, the Society was not fortunate in its choice of a successor, and the College languished, while its funds were sadly reduced. At this time there were only eight students: the Tutor was also curate of two chapels, and chaplain of the Lower Estate; the chaplain of the Upper Estate was also Master of the Grammar School: hence it is not surprising that the pastoral work also was very weak; no Sunday Schools were open, and not a handful of children were in the Estate day school.

But in 1847 the Society received an offer of service abroad from one of the ablest Cambridge men of the day, Richard Rawle, third Wrangler and fourth Classic in 1835, who after his Fellowship at Trinity was serving a College parish, Cheadle. His offer was an open one, and they most gladly at once placed Codrington College under his care. He was Principal for seventeen years, and in many ways left a deep impression on Church life in Barbados and the adjoining Colonies. Systematic in his churchmanship, thorough in his theological teaching, he supplemented his purely collegiate labours by assiduous pastoral work, and besides that took in hand education generally. He taught regularly at the Lodge Grammar School; he invited elementary schoolmasters to the College in vacations and instructed them. And besides, faithful to the Missionary idea which had primarily removed him from his English parish, he became the real founder of the Pongas Mission, as has been seen. For the students for this he fitted up part of the premises at the Principal's Lodge as a Hostel. During his time the controversy as to this endowment being used for anything besides a Grammar

Digitized by Google

School, and exhibitions to England, was revived by the Chief-Justice, Sir R. B. Clark; and Principal Rawle had to fight Bishop Coleridge's battle all over again. Strange would it have been had the Church been despoiled of this College, by having its Theological and Missionary purpose cut out, just about the time when another great English Missionary Society—the Baptist—was establishing in Jamaica its Calabar College for precisely parallel purposes.

When Principal Rawle had, as he considered, finished his constructive work for the College, and the educational system of the whole island besides, he retired, and became vicar of Tamworth. About this time he was sounded by the great Bishop Selwyn as to whether he would be the man to take up his work in New Zealand. But he would not: just as before he had declined the Bishopric of Antigua. But when in his English parochial work a new West Indian appeal came to him, to organize the Church in Trinidad as its first Bishop, he went and served there for seventeen years.

He was succeeded at Codrington by a favourite pupil of his own, William Thomas Webb, who had gone out for his health as a young man and found the climate such as to enable him to work there for twenty years as Tutor, and twenty years as Principal, being also Rural Dean, and Archdeacon of Grenada. Though lacking the prestige of having been at an English University, the tradition of steadiness and industry was well preserved by Mr. Webb, who for five years had the assistance of a Classical Tutor who became attached with singular devotion to the Codrington ideal, and has been a consistent friend to the West Indies, the present Earl of Stamford.

In 1875 an important step was taken when Bishop Mitchinson, as President of the College Council, successfully carried out a scheme of affiliation with

Digitized by Google

the University of Durham. This plan secures guidance to study and also a test for the results attained, so far as examinations can test, from an educational body of authority in England. The curriculum is guided by the Durham Calendar; the questions are sent to Codrington, the answers examined in Durham, and a list issued, supplementary to the Durham one by reason of lapse of six weeks, but in every other sense of identical significance.

Another move of Bishop Mitchinson's was the addition of a Training Department to the College, but for reasons given in Chapter VII. this has been abandoned.

In 1884 the present writer succeeded Archdeacon Webb as Principal. In 1886 the Principalship vacated by his resignation was occupied temporarily by Prebendary Meyrick, and then, owing to the diminution of funds, was suspended for a time; and in 1889 Bishop Rawle acceded to the request of the Society to resume his old post, on his retirement from Trinidad. But he was worn out, and within the year he died, in the Lodge where Codrington died, and where he had himself passed the prime years of his middle life. A stone cross on a massive pedestal stands on the hill overlooking the terrace on which the College is placed, and in full aspect of the Atlantic Ocean—a memorial of a name ever to be honoured in West Indian annals.

In 1890 the Society saw its way to resume the appointment of a Principal, and the present Rev. T. H. Bindley, B.D., of Merton College, Oxford, now Canon of St. Michael's and Examining Chaplain to the Bishop, went out. But he has to work with a diminished staff, with some feeling of precariousness, and with a sense of the diminished range of the work by the falling off in lay-students. In qualifying for theological students there is no cessation of industry; in 1892 Principal Bindley initiated resort to the

Digitized by Google

Oxford and Cambridge Preliminary Examination as a further test. If the income could only be maintained, the plan of the College at present is—

A Principal, a Tutor, a Chaplain to the Estates, a Medical Lecturer, and a Teacher of Hindi and Urdu: six Foundation Scholars (Theological), a Theological Scholar for each West Indian diocese (with £25 towards each from the S.P.C.K.), four Island Students (Barbados Government, lay), two Leacock Students (a Barbados endowment), a Rawle scholarship, and some Pinder Studentships for Missionary work. Some of these can be held together. In 1886 there were twenty-three students in the College (not including any in the Mission-house); during the interregnum they declined, but twenty-two has been reached again. The majority of them are white. There is a local Council, of which the Bishop of Barbados is President, and all West Indian Bishops Vice-Presidents. It is an advisory board for the Trustees, and has been of some service. But as it is exclusively a Barbados body, except for the Bishops, who are seldom able to attend, its actual contribution to the guidance of the College, on fundamental and expansive lines, has not been great.

From 1830 to 1895 373 students passed through the College, of whom 135 became Associates or Licentiates of the University of Durham; and about 135 were ordained. In 1895 there were, besides Barbadians, students from Guiana, Trinidad, St. Vincent, Antigua, St. Kitts, and Jamaica.

The opening of the Jamaica Theological College has affected Codrington College; but it is difficult even for an ardent Codringtonian to see what else Jamaican churchmen could have done. The S.P.G. has recognized the expediency of their action by granting them £1000 out of the Marriott bequest.

The "Mission House" is continued in a sense, but

Digitized by Google

the Mission students are not now lodged in a separate building. The number of such students has never been large, but there have been some Negroes or coloured men of high quality, notably Duport, Doughlin, and Mr. J. B. McEwen, past and present Superintendents of the Pongas Mission, in whose work the history of that Mission has its central thread; and lately the Jamaica men, Mr. Burris and Mr. March, came here for a short period before going out to Africa, as Mr. Farquhar had done, from the Mico Institution in Antigua.

The history of Codrington College forms "a striking and almost romantic episode in the history of the Transatlantic churches," as Lord Stamford expresses it. It is the senior college in the British Colonies. From under the cloud of financial depression which terribly hampers it and forbids any efforts for expansion, it looks proudly on its Founder as the man who stimulated Bishop Berkeley to his noble design, as one who laid down the method of Brotherhoods for Missionary work 150 years before the Cambridge Mission to Delhi or the Mission in Zanzibar; and, generally, as one of the thin line of staunch Churchmen who connect the "golden age" of English Theology with the Oxford Movement of our day. It looks back also upon its second benefactor, John Brathwaite, as the type of the West Indian Planter at his best; upon its reorganizer, Bishop Coleridge, who learned from his organizing here how to guide the first Missionary College in England itself, St. Augustine's, of which he was the first Warden; upon its first Principal, Pinder, the practical inaugurator of the Graduates' Theological Colleges in England; upon its great Principal, Rawle; upon its first Scholar, Bishop Jackson, and his son in the faith, Bishop Branch, West Indians born and educated, and honoured Bishops of Antigua; upon capable and devoted clergy; upon

Digitized by Google

some intelligent planters and some able lawyers who laid at least the foundation of their academical studies in the College; and upon all the rank and file of those who went to their life-work having learnt, without leaving West Indian soil, the joy of having an Alma Mater of their own. The preservation to West Indians of this institution is one of the essentials of their self-respect and their progress.

THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLISH SOCIETIES

1. The most intimate connection has been with the S.P.G.; the "Plantations" were the earliest object of this society, the heathen to be mainly approached by our own Colonies. Through the 18th century, however, the Trusteeship of Codrington was its chief care, as the Church was established in all these Colonies, the Aboriginal inhabitants were few, and the Slaves were assumed to be under the established clergy; special help was sent to the Bahamas and the Mosquito Coast. But when emancipation came, the "great and immediate effort" known as the Negro Education Fund was the chief means by which English Churchmen assisted in the crisis. After this the Society again withdrew from some Colonies, but (1) the disendowment of the Churches, (2) the decline of the sugar industry, and (3) the opening of Coolie missions and the Indian missions in Guiana, and (4) the expansion of Honduras, obliged her to come again to their help. For 1897 the grants were: Honduras (with Panama) £952, Antigua £850, Guiana £775, Trinidad £675, Nassau £508, Windward Islands £100, Jamaica and Barbados nothing. In return £67 was received from the local associations. Grants have also been made to the endowment of Sees. The Colonial Bishoprics Fund has assisted

Digitized by Google

largely in this; as have the S.P.C.K. and the S.P.G., both separately and through the Fund.

2. The S.P.C.K. has assisted and still assists in supply of literature, and in grants to Schools and Mission Chapels, and in endowing Sees. In 1895 it sent £73 to Jamaica for studentships, £795 to buildings in six of the dioceses, £1500 See endowment (Guiana and Jamaica), £50 in lantern slides to four dioceses, and books to all.

3. The C.M.S. has at times maintained Missionaries, as has been recorded in each place. It now has no work here; but receives a contribution instead, for its work in other lands.

4. The Colonial and Continental Society has given some assistance since 1843, amounting at one time to £400 a year; it now sends some £130 to Jamaica, and assists the congregations in the foreign islands and in Central America.

5. There is an old society called the "New England Company," the oldest of all our Missionary Societies, founded by the Long Parliament in 1649, and greatly supported by Robert Boyle in his day. It assisted the West Indies with about £600 a year between 1823 and 1829, and then ceased; it resumed again 1871—1879 with a grant to a Jamaica student for medical education, but has done nothing since. It may be a question whether a portion of its income, all from endowments, might not fairly be allotted to West Indian work.

6. There is, however, a special West Indian Society in existence, "The Christian Faith Society." It was originated by the piety of Robert Boyle, who was also first governor of the New England Society for the benefit of "Infidels," and he left to it the greater part of his personal estate; with this a property was purchased in Yorkshire. In the 18th century little intelligence was shown in the use of the funds, the whole

Digitized by Google

being despatched for many years to William and Mary College, Virginia, for the education of Indian children. The separation of Virginia from the empire put an end to this method. The then Bishop of London, Porteus, an able and conscientious prelate, found that a sum of £22,000 had accumulated, and his thoughts turned to another part of the Plantations under his episcopal charge. He secured from Chancery permission to transfer the funds for the benefit of the West Indies, and a society was chartered under the title "The Society for the Conversion and Religious Instruction and Education of the Negro Slaves in the British West Indian Islands;" this was in 1792.

Bishop Porteus had large and generous ideas for the Slaves; the income of the Society, about £660, was to be only the nucleus round which voluntary subscriptions were to be gathered; missionaries and schoolmasters were to be sent out in large numbers to aid the West Indian parish clergy; the thought of 500,000 slaves, "all Infidels and Heathen, with a very few exceptions," and also of the Caribs, caused him genuine pastoral anxiety. Planters were represented by their English friends to be willing to assist in such efforts. The "Court" of the Society was composed of many dignitaries, including the Secretary of State, the Lord Mayor, the Deans of St. Paul's and Westminster, the heir-at-law of Robert Boyle, and retired West Indians. But the working out was on a much more modest scale. The great officials seldom attended a "Court," as might be supposed; but what was worse was, that neither were clergy and catechists forthcoming to go out, nor were the Planters in any sense worth speaking of ready to stir in the matter at all. The records of the Society furnish a melancholy instance of ample designs gradually being reduced, until at last there is a dull sense of acquiescence in

Digitized by Google

the Society merely maintaining one or two clergy and a schoolmaster or two, seeing its income accumulate idly at the bankers', and, in very conscience, ceasing from soliciting subscriptions any farther. It cannot be said that any great generosity was shown in the treatment of the few agents secured; the stipend was only £200, and voyage expenses were grudgingly added: one of the missionaries had his salary raised because he was hopelessly in debt, for reasons which he very fully explains, being responsible for the expenses of his work as well as of his own maintenance. On the early death of one they allowed only a single sum of £50 to his daughter, who wrote on behalf of herself, sisters, and brothers, and this just when funds were lying so evidently superfluous that they ceased asking for subscriptions. It may be that it was because they had no confidence that they had secured men of the right stamp, and that their reports were so discouraging, that at one meeting one of the agents was instructed to write less frequently, and with more brevity. In the islands the clergy looked upon such agents as went as interlopers: the Planters cordially endorsed their view, and so another £32,000 soon accumulated. The Bishop in 1806 altered the policy; no more clergy were to be sent, but only schoolmasters; and he took trouble to get the West Indians to know of the new "Bell" system of education, in the hope that they would apply to the Society for schoolmasters to carry it out far and wide. But they did nothing of the kind.

In 1814 the Court (Howley, Bishop) looked round again, and took counsel's opinion as to whether they might use the money in giving additional stipends to the parish clergy, on condition that they worked among the slaves. It was favourable, and they added £200 to the stipend of a Nevis rector, Davis (afterwards Bishop of Antigua); he, however, "exceeded

Digitized by Google

in zeal," as he attended a Wesleyan Missionary Meeting, and was reproved by Dr. Howley both as his Diocesan and as President of this Society. In 1823 the Society spent some money in printing some lectures on the gospels by Mr. Harte, rector of St. Lucy's, Barbados, and sent a representation to the Colonial Secretary, urging the abolition of Sunday markets.

In 1823 the Society participated in the general brightening which was commencing: they had four "ministers" allowed to work in Jamaica, and some in Demerara, and they resumed collecting, as applications to go out were becoming more numerous than the regular income would meet. And the new Secretary thought that all classes in the Colonies were becoming so united that it was unnecessary to devote their funds to slaves as a separate class. In 1825 the Bishops of Jamaica and Barbados appear on the scene, and gradually the Society's responsibilities diminish, as they feel more and more that the best thing they can do is to hand the funds over to them. In 1832 they raised £10,000 after the Barbados hurricane. In 1833 they asked the Bishops to prepare schemes for covering the islands with a network of schools; one from the Bishop of Barbados was received, but none from Jamaica: the former, however, in his energy exceeded his grants by £3739.

When the great benefactor to the Colonies, Charles James Blomfield, became Bishop of London, he thought, as slavery had gone, of amalgamating this Society with the S.P.G., but there were difficulties. He procured a new Charter, and the title was altered to the present one, "The Incorporated Society for Advancing the Christian Faith in the British West Indian Islands and elsewhere, and in the Mauritius." All communication was to be with the Bishops: the income was only £1315 just then; of this £500 was

Digitized by Google

allotted to Jamaica, £700 to Barbados (with a protest on the part of the former), to be expended on schools rather than on clergy stipends, and in small sums, so as to evoke other assistance; the Bishop of Jamaica was several times remonstrated with for neglect of these conditions. In 1843 the grants were rearranged by the division of the Diocese of Barbados—that island, £400; Guiana, £200; Antigua, £200. The S.P.G. was now withdrawing, and this Society also desired the Bishops to see that their money was not given in a way that would set up permanent claims; no bodies were "to lean upon them as settled pensioners." In 1850 the second Secretary, Dr. Barrett, resigned: "I have lived," he writes to the Bishop of Barbados, after thirty-eight years of office, "to see Episcopacy not only established in the West Indian Colonies, but the number of churches increased, and the clergy improved in character beyond expectation." He was succeeded by Dr. Bailey, the new Warden of St. Augustine's, Canterbury, who is still the secretary, with forty-seven years' experience. In 1867 Nassau diocese came in, £100 a year; 1877, Trinidad, £60—later, £100; from the Barbados grant. In 1874 the Society declined a request to make a great collection in England for the disendowed churches. On the re-establishment of Barbados diocese, its grant was allotted to the Windward Islands. From 1881 £50 of the Jamaica grant was given to Honduras.

The Society's statement for 1895 shows its position now. *Receipts:* Rents, less 10 per cent. returned, £1700; Dividends on £23,400, £640; Total £2340. *Expenditure:* on the Estate £250; salaries, £225; obligatory payment to the New England Company, £90; grants, £1550; Total £2115. The Grants were—Jamaica, £400; Honduras, £50; Barbados (it should be Windward Islands), £200; Trinidad, £200; Guiana, £200; Antigua, £200;

Digitized by Google

Nassau, £200; and Mauritius (as by the new Charter), £100.

7. In 1825 there was formed in London "The Ladies' Society for the Education of the Children of Negroes in the West Indies." It was expressly for the children of the Slaves, and was a part of the general movement in their behalf. Grants were to be given to clergy who would open schools; but schools of other Christian bodies were also aided, especially Moravian. Several Refuges for young girls and Orphanages were also assisted liberally. For seventy years this good work went on, but of late in gradually diminishing amount. In 1897 the Committee decided that as the Churches were now mainly self-supporting, and as, moreover, the local Legislatures were liberally providing for education in conjunction with the Church and in supplement to it, the need for their seeking fresh subscribers had gone, while old ones kept year by year disappearing. The Society, therefore, closed by distributing its balance among the institutions at that time on its books. It had for seventy years given effective assistance of that most valuable kind, "help in time of need." In closing the Society the Committee made an appeal to its present subscribers to become supporters of the Pongas Mission, as akin in its object to the aim for which the Society had worked so long.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX

SOME SPECIAL POINTS AND FINAL OBSERVATIONS

Antigua—Windward Islands—Trinidad and Tobago—Guiana—Nassau—British Honduras—Other Christian Bodies and their present position: Presbyterians, Congregationalists, Baptists, Methodists, Moravians, Salvation Army—Statistics—Misrepresentations: Froude, Mr. Salmon—Final Reflections: The Industrial Depression; Grounds for Encouragement of W. Indian Churchmen—The time not yet come for entire self-maintenance.

Diocese of Antigua (the Leeward Islands).—The work here really includes that of several distinct communities. The diocese consists of the Islands of Antigua (Cathedral at St. John's), St. Kitts,[1] Nevis, Montserrat, Dominica, the Virgin Islands, with jurisdiction over our work in Danish, Dutch, Spanish, and French islands adjacent. It formed the Archdeaconry of Antigua, in the diocese of Barbados, until 1842: it now consists of three Archdeaconries: Antigua, St. Kitts, and Virgin Islands. There has always been a pleasant character about this diocese; in its attitude to the Slave population it was less exacting, and more hopeful of the amenability of the Negro to instruction. The people were the first to abolish the whip as a driving instrument; to allow the Negroes

[1] This is our oldest permanent settlement in the West Indies, 1623. Barbados was occupied by the planting of a flag in 1605, the first settlement was in 1625.

Digitized by Google

trial by jury; and on Emancipation they set the slaves free at once without Apprenticeship. Moravian efforts obtained fair reception, and our own early missionaries from the Christian Faith Society found here a support, or at least sufferance, not paralleled in Jamaica or Barbados. The Wesleyans were always strong here, and harmonious relations have always been maintained among the Christian bodies.

After disendowment it was a great assistance to the diocese that the Colonial Office acted liberally in the matter of the retirement of Bishop Jackson. In view of his forty-seven years of ministerial work in the Established Church he was allowed to live in England on full stipend, leaving a Coadjutor in Antigua; this enabled him to set aside a sum which has resulted in the full endowment of the See—£20,000, 1894. His Coadjutor, Bishop Branch, was a very able deputy, and was accustomed always to face the situation of affairs with sanguine cheerfulness. In his first Charge he encouraged voluntary efforts, and showed that in his Cathedral Parish the £150 a year raised when the Church was endowed, had become nearly £1200 on the free system. He charged against concurrent endowment and carried the Synod with him, and it was not adopted here. Even so late as 1892, when the pressure of distress was becoming severe, the amount raised in the diocese was the largest yet known.

Windward Islands Diocese.—When the attempt to federate the smaller islands of the West Indies in the seventies failed, and Barbados remained a separate Government, its neighbours, St. Vincent and Grenada and their dependencies, with Tobago, were formed into the Windward Islands Government, with one Governor but separate Legislatures. Ecclesiastical arrangements followed the same course: the Established Church of Barbados could not be part of a

Digitized by Google

diocese, and Bishop Mitchinson arranged for the formation of the Windward diocese, of which he took Episcopal supervision without salary, an arrangement continued by his successor, Bishop Bree. The Provincial Synod approved the arrangement, but expressed an opinion that these islands should eventually be joined with Trinidad. In their Synod III. there were three courses discussed—(1) going on as at present, (2) joining Trinidad, (3) dividing, St. Vincent to Barbados, Grenada to Trinidad. The first course was carried by ten to one. But in 1897 Bishop Bree has resigned, so that some action will be required. Tobago, however, which has recently been placed politically with Trinidad, was passed into that diocese at its own wish. The churches in St. Lucia have recently joined the Windwards; when invited to do so by Synod they accepted, the Provincial Synod approved, and the instrument of Incorporation from Canterbury was duly issued.

In Grenada there is some industrial activity, as the island has abandoned sugar (only £15 worth exported in 1895) and has taken to cocoa and "spices": it is mostly in the hands of peasant proprietors. But in St. Vincent distress has been acute; the parishes were abruptly disendowed, and several clergy had to leave (as did also several Wesleyan ministers); and in 1885 a rector was starved out after fourteen years' service; the clergy were reduced to six. The S.P.G. grant for 1897 for the diocese was £100; but for 1898, and three years following, there will be £170 a year specially added. In St. Lucia there is more modern industry, several *usines*, with 2500 East Indians, but a large part of the island is still unoccupied. It is to be the head-quarters of the military and naval forces.

Trinidad.—In this island we find ourselves side by side with the Roman Church, which retains a

Digitized by Google

majority of the old inhabitants. Accordingly Bishop Rawle always designated himself Bishop of the Church of England in Trinidad. Besides the white and coloured people who come under our direct care, there is also, as already indicated, a large scope for Missionary work to the East Indians. Mr. Froude was so much impressed by the foreign aspect of the Colony as to say that its value to us was wholly dubious; in it we are the transient element: of course, this much affects the situation, and our work there is rather that of maintaining congregations, with evangelistic work of the purely missionary type to the Coolies. The capitalist system of this island enables it to accommodate its industry to low prices more effectively than the older Colonies could do, and distress is not yet severe.

Tobago offers an instance of good work seriously threatened by terrible industrial depression. Its little Legislature after Emancipation most liberally supported the Church in her efforts, voting £2200 to meet the S.P.G. £433, and divided the single parish into three. The people responded admirably, and soon the island ceased to need extraneous help, except for occasional hurricane distresses. But disendowment came, and again the S.P.G. was appealed to. Now there are seven parishes with twelve churches, and 10,000 of the 18,000 people definitely attached to them, ministered to by only three clergy. The island was attached to the diocese of Trinidad in 1889. The Bishop is distressed with its poverty; skin-diseases are becoming rife through insufficient food. But the churches are full, and the schools. He says that the Trinidad Romanists have their eye upon it should our ministrations shrink, and dreads their occupation of what is "an old and loyal Church centre." It is a pathetic sign of the life of this little community that when Mr. Froude visited the island, a deputation from one of the

Digitized by Google

island parishes called upon him and asked leave to act on the ship, their play being the *Merchant of Venice*.

Guiana.—The character of its population is singularly complex: in 1891 British and Dutch, 4500; Portuguese, 12,000; Negroes and coloured, 140,000; East Indian, 105,000; Chinese, 4000; Aborigines, 17,000. The peculiar features of this diocese have been brought out as our narrative has proceeded. Our Church works conjointly with the Presbyterians and the Dutch *quâ* establishment, and other bodies also receive endowment. We have—(1) our own parishes and congregations in the Presbyterian parishes; (2) the Coolie Missions, both East Indian and Chinese; and (3) the River Missions to the Aborigines. As large-scale production here, as in Trinidad, prevails, the distress is not so great; but there is less room in this coast-colony for substitution of other products for sugar. The gold-mines, however, may prove a source of wealth, curiously carrying the country back to the idea of it in the Raleigh period, but it will alter the character of the Colony if these remote regions become the centre of its prosperity. The future is in no way clear; but the unique episcopate of Bishop Austin has put good heart into Churchmen, and there is reason for expecting them to be alive to any change in the character of the Colony, and to endeavour to adapt Church organization to meet it.

Nassau (the Bahamas).—This group of islands constitutes a diocese of peculiar character by reason of their scattered character and sparse populations, only some 50,000 people altogether. Their poverty has been alluded to, and there is little substantial improvement to record since 1870. Communication with U.S.A. is improved, and some summer visitors resort to the islands, but not in large numbers as yet. In 1876 Bishop Venables found himself struggling at one and the same time against Disendowment; a

Digitized by Google

hurricane distress; and paralysis of trade after the American War, and emigration in consequence; yet he did not lose heart, but increased the stations from fifty-seven to seventy-eight. And Bishops Roberts and Churton have increased the clergy to twenty, five at Nassau, the rest in the islands; there are ninety-nine catechists, all unpaid but one, and some schoolmasters. The diocese is helped by the Church Societies at home, and the Bahamas District is not yet required to be independent by the Wesleyans. There is a Mission to sailors in Nassau Harbour. A very pleasing evidence of the effect of the work done is given by the experience of a U.S.A. missionary in Florida, who testified to the excellent character of some Church emigrants from Nassau, who settled there. This form of beneficial work is likely to continue in these islands, as some continuance of migration from them to the mainland seems probable.

British Honduras.—In this Colony two-thirds of the people are Romanists, and the adherents of the Wesleyan Missions come next in number. On disestablishment the two congregations of Belize elected a "Synod," which the local Legislature invested with autocratic powers. The S.P.G. clergy outside invoked the Bishop of Jamaica, and by the intervention of the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Colonial Office the formation of a schismatic body was avoided. Progress was continued both in the settlements and the missions, and in 1883 it was formed into a diocese, although without a separate Bishop until 1891. The first Bishop was Henry Redmayne Holme, a Cambridge man who had served admirably in the diocese of Antigua, and whose devotion to Missionary work had led him to make the voyage to West Africa to examine and encourage the Pongas Mission. Consecrated at Bridgetown—the first Bishop ever consecrated in the West Indies—he started for Belize, but was

Digitized by Google

wrecked on the way. He shared the sufferings of the crew and passengers on a rock for ten days, but thought that he was restored, and at once visited the Honduras congregations; but his health was ruined, and in the July of the year of his consecration he died. Dr. Ormsby, a South London rector, accepted the charge after two years of vacancy, and the diocese is now vigorously worked, the clergy being raised to eighteen. By the Provincial Synod of 1895, it has been extended to cover any English congregations formed on the Caribbean sea-board of the States of Colombia, in Panama on the Pacific side, or at the works of the Panama Canal. Of the eighteen clergy twelve work outside the Colony.

Other Christian Bodies.—The Roman branch of the Church continues its influence in the British West Indies, as has been pointed out, in those islands taken over from countries where she was the Established Church at the time of their cession to us: in Trinidad, Dominica, St. Lucia, and Grenada the members of her communion are more numerous than those of ours. She has shared our fortunes in several ways; disestablished by transfer of sovereignty, she still was endowed concurrently with others, and when disendowment came had to pass through the same experience as ourselves. But in the above islands complete disendowment has not yet been applied.

Without formulating any union, she has worked with us in educational policy, and in combination we have succeeded in retaining the denominational system. But even in social reform her authorities are unwilling to be publicly associated with ours. The Archbishop of the Province has his seat at Port of Spain, Trinidad. There are Bishops of Roseau, Dominica, Demerara, Jamaica, and Honduras.

The Presbyterians are numerous in Jamaica and Guiana: in the former they have sixty-five congrega-

Digitized by Google

tions (eight as a Presbytery of the Scottish Establishment, fifty-seven as an independent Presbyterian body in Jamaica). In Guiana, as was seen, they share establishment and endowment with the English Church and the Dutch; there are congregations in Grenada, the Bahamas, and St. Lucia.

The Congregationalists have ten Pastors in Jamaica, who have increased their membership within the last twenty years, although their situation was such as to call forth a Deputational visit from the Congregational Union at home in 1895, consisting of Dr. Barrett (son of a former Jamaica Minister) and the Union Secretary. A careful report was presented, the gist of which was that the circumstances of the island seemed to call for a renewal of help from home for a time. Their opinion of the spiritual condition was on the whole favourable.

In Guiana they have thirteen ministers. Up to 1894 the London Missionary Society assisted, but since then they only "help and advise" through the "Colonial Society": the claims of the heathen world being the expressed grounds for withdrawal. A little help in assisting ministers to go out was what might still be granted from time to time. The Congregationalists object to all endowments, concurrent or other.

The Baptists have a great hold in Jamaica, which indeed figures in the reports of their Missionary Society as the most successful of all the fields in which they have been engaged. Sixty-one ministers with 179 stations and 36,000 members constitute a large and successful Union. No chapel is complete without its Day School, they hold, but they are strangely content to leave these undenominational. In Turks Islands, Trinidad, and Bahamas they have one minister in each, with a total of 5500 members. Progress is slow, with occasional relapses, and keenness of struggle with financial depression. They are not only

Digitized by Google

self-supporting (except for the Tutors and buildings at Calabar College), but they send out to Hayti, Cuba, Honduras, and Costa Rica, and also to the Home Society's Missions in West Africa. This is the more honourable because they never accept endowment, even on the concurrent method.

To the Wesleyan Methodists also the West Indies are "classic ground": and now they are the most numerous of all denominations outside the Church, and their strength is widely distributed. They divide the West Indies into two "Districts" with two Conferences, which unite biennially. But the Bahamas and Honduras districts are still under the Home Conference.

When we reflect on Wesleyan Methodist organization and much of their teaching, the difference between them and Churchmen seems here reduced to a minimum. We have followed them in reviving "Conferences" (our Synods), in bringing in lay help, and in going beyond the Act of Uniformity in Public worship; and they too learn from us. There is, however, no thought of union at present, and it would not be in this part of the empire that so immensely important a project would be discussed. It is from home that the impulse for a mighty reform like this would have to come. But there is little in West Indian Methodism which would need altering, should such happy times ever arrive.

The United Free Methodists have nine ministers in Jamaica with 3500 members. But we have not met with any record of Primitive Methodists, or of those of the New Connexion, or the Bible Christians.

A U.S.A. denomination calling themselves the "Christian Church," known usually as Campbellites (President Garfield's denomination), has eighteen congregations in Jamaica.

The Moravians continue to hold their ground in forty-nine stations, chiefly in Jamaica, the Leewards,

Digitized by Google

and Barbados. They have two Provinces, Jamaica the Western, the rest the Eastern, each with its Bishop. The last report shows eighty-three Missionaries, of whom thirty-eight are Sisters; twenty-nine are Natives. Their baptized members are given as 46,000—this includes children who have been baptized but are not yet communicants: in 1887 the number of communicants was 16,000. In 1897 the Herrnhut authorities decided that these Provinces must be self-supporting. They accept concurrent endowment when offered. To the Moravians, as to the Wesleyans, their West Indian work counts very largely in their returns: the above 46,000 constitute half the membership of their whole mission field, and Surinam (Dutch Guiana) takes up 27,000 of the other half. They work peacefully and amicably with us; and it was from the West Indies that the request came to an early Lambeth Conference to examine their "orders" in relation to ours.

Salvation Army.—The latest organization to enter into work here is the Salvation Army. It commenced operations in Jamaica in 1892, in Guiana in 1895. In September 1897 there were in Jamaica sixty-one stations and 100 officers, "Evangelists who are entirely given up to the work"; in Guiana, five stations and twenty-two officers. Local editions of the *War Cry* show the usual methods in force; and from the congeniality of some of their methods with Negro temperament it will be surprising if the Army does not make considerable impression.

To construct a single table which would exhibit all the forces of Christian work proves impossible, through the varieties of circumstance and the varying manner in which statistics are formed and given. The first table is given as at least interesting as endeavouring to give an idea of the relative positions of the Denominations, and also the general range of Chris-

Digitized by Google

tian enterprise. Others are appended as offering comparative views of particular regions.

	Clergy, Pastors or ordained Missionaries.	Members, Full members or Communicants.	Sunday Scholars.	Day Schools.
Church of England...	318	127,000(H.C.)	57,200	700 about
Wesleyan Methodists	124	52,000 (Full members)	35,000	35,000 schl.
Baptist	70	42,000 (Full members)	33,000	272(undenl.)
Congregationalist ...	23			
Presbyterian ...	55	19,000		
Moravian	83	19,000 [1]	16,000	131

Jamaica :—

Church of England	Communicants	...	45,000
Wesleyans	Full members ...	...	24,000
Baptists	,, ...	...	36,000
Congregationalists	,, ...	...	3,600
Presbyterians	,, ...	...	12,600
U. Methodist Free C.	,, ...	...	3,500
Moravians	,, ...	...	6,500

Barbados :—The Government Grant according to estimated membership :—

	£
Church of England	10,000
Wesleyans	700
Moravians	400
Romanists	50

or by census returns of 1891 :—

Church of England	156,500
Wesleyans	14,400
Moravians	7,000
Romanists	800
Jews	22
Others	1,560
Not stated	2,600

(Church Communicants were 22,475.)

[1] These are estimates : it has proved impossible to obtain exact figures.

Digitized by Google

Windward Islands: Church of England, 19,000 members; Roman 29,000; Wesleyan, 3000; Presbyterian, 400.

Leeward Islands: Church of England, 33,000 of population; Roman 29,000; Wesleyan, 30,000; Moravian, 17,000.

Trinidad: Church of England, about one-fourth of the population; Roman, the majority of the other Christian people; East Indians, one-third of the whole.

Guiana: The Government grant is allotted as follows: Church of England, £10,800; Church of Scotland, £5100; Roman, £2500; Wesleyan, £1700; Moravians, one station only.

The Provincial Synod of 1895 considered the subject of union among Christians. They saw no way towards "formal and organic union," but placed on record their "appreciation of the true work done for Christ within our dioceses by many individuals and Christian Bodies not of our Communion," declared their "love for all who love our Lord Jesus Christ," and called for prayer for "removal of divisions."

The Primate appended to his address to this Synod some statistics "defective but as complete as information would permit," of which the following is a summary of some principal points :—

Diocese.	Clergy.	Communicants.	Sunday Scholars	Church Day Schools.
Jamaica	104	45,000	30,600	318
Barbados	58	22,000	3,200	150
Windward Islands ...	16	6,000	—	—
Antigua	37	13,000	8,800	?
Trinidad	26	7,000	2,200	43
Guiana	45	13,000	6,700	100
Nassau	23	5,000	4,100	?
Br. Honduras ...	9	1,300	700	10
	318	112,300	56.300	about 700

Digitized by Google

MISREPRESENTATIONS

Controversy is not itself attractive, and at the close of the review of a period of Church history is peculiarly unpalatable. But there are three sources of misrepresentation from which the work of the West Indian Church during these last sixty years suffers wrong, and which does them an injury with their brethren at home which their sense of gratitude for great kindness in recent years makes intolerable.

The first is from representations of religious work as ineffective by reference to the prevailing vices and even the childish simplicities of the Negro populations. West Indian Churchmen are the last to wish to veil these from their own knowledge, or to conceal their existence from inquirers; all they ask is that inquirers should regard things relatively, taking into account both the condition of the working classes in other countries, and the condition of these Negroes before Emancipation. From observers thus prepared to observe properly they never fail to find sympathy and encouragement.

The second is from representations due to carelessness, haste, and absence of anything approaching scientific collection of facts. The hasty traveller passing from port to port with a few days' sojourn in one Colony or another, gathering his information from the chance company of ships' decks, hotels and boarding-houses, or at most from a few circles of acquaintance here and there, is unfortunately the very man who can write a book in an easy way, and by his very lightness of heart and hand catch the popular taste; to the confusion of knowledge and the defamation of solid work. It is impossible not to mention in this regard the late Mr. Froude. Possessing as he did the ear of the educated public of

Digitized by Google

England, he has placed on the shelves of all our Public Libraries a volume which has given rise to the deepest resentment on the part of the West Indian Colonies on their civil and political side, and caused the greatest pain to English Churchmen by reason of its travesty of the results of their work for sixty years.

From the Governor's pew at a Sunday morning service he judges of the whole Church in Jamaica, and writes it down as still the Church of the Whites; from the casual sources he thought it sufficient to consult he can learn nothing of any good done by it for the masses of the people, and so on. The previous pages of this book supply the answer Churchmen can offer. For example, if the Church is still only for the Whites, whence came the 45,000 registered Communicants in Jamaica, where there are now less than 15,000 white people, children and all? And by whose subscriptions have the increasing numbers of the clergy been supported? And who are the 100 Catechists and their congregations in the remoter valleys and plains? What do the Moravians say of the chief centre of population? "There has been, during the past few years, a very active movement set on foot by the Anglican Church, with a view of supplying the spiritual needs of Kingston, and under the direction of the Bishop of that Church, several churches have been erected in the outlying townships of the city." (*Periodical Accounts*, September 1897.) Are these churches built either by or for the Whites, decreasing as they are in numbers and wealth? Or again, did Mr. Froude ever seek to attend a sitting of a Committee of Synod, or a meeting of the Church Temperance Society? Did he enter a Sunday School, or make friendly inquiries of the Negroes in their own homes? The most careful study of his most careless book discloses no such attempt to verify

Digitized by Google

the sweeping statements his imagination was constructing, and he must go down to posterity as a man who could speak irresponsibly from a position of responsibility in which he was placed by his talents, and could write carelessly when his evidence was important, and with bias when justice was imperative.

The third source of misrepresentation almost invariably accompanying the other two is the carrying up to our day of statements which were true before the Church awoke to her duty in this region. Every one acknowledges that the Negroes were neglected for centuries; the appeals of our Church Societies at the time of Emancipation are based upon this very fact, and this history has made no attempt to disguise it. But when men write now they should not carry on stock phrases descriptive of sixty years ago; they might as well describe English industry now as it was before Free Trade, or English politics now as they were before the Reform Bill, as the English Church in the West Indies now as it was before the Bishops came out. And yet it is only on the supposition of being thus benighted that such statements as appear in a work of Mr. C. S. Salmon, and, issued with the stamp of the Cobden Club (*The Caribbean Confederation*), can be accounted for. We have shown that Churchmen fully recognize the neglect of days gone by, and they cordially acquiesce in the gratitude felt for the other Christian influences which have co-operated with theirs so nobly and with such success; but these pages will have been written to no purpose if English Churchmen do not now feel that their brethren in these old Slave Colonies, from Nassau to the southern confines of Guiana, have taken part in a quickening of life as real as that which has been vouchsafed to the Church at home.

Digitized by Google

FINAL

The work of the Church in a community is necessarily affected by the vicissitudes of the industrial condition. In the West Indies the last ten or fifteen years have been a period of increasing stress and anxiety. Without going in any detail into the causes, it is advisable to point out that the change is mainly due to the fact that West Indian sugar has met with a competitor in Beetroot which has brought prices below the old cost of production. It is not that the islands have stood still in population or energy; the exported produce of Barbados kept increasing in volume to 51,000 hogsheads of sugar in 1881, and rose still higher, to 63,000, in 1894; but the prices were such that the value even of this increased amount was 25 per cent. lower; in Trinidad 870,000 tons rose to 1,092,000, but the value was 14 per cent. less. Rents, interest, profits, and wages therefore had less to divide among them.

Adjustment has proved possible to some extent, in two ways: (1) as in Barbados, Guiana, and Trinidad, the value of property has been taken as reduced; rents and interest have been lowered, fixed charges have been compounded for or reduced by means of the Courts of Chancery, or even the Bankruptcy Courts. With these items on a new level, and with more of the sugar-growers and manufacturers residing, much has been done. But there seems little room for further adjustment of this kind. (2) By resort to other industries. In Jamaica the sugar export fell from 580,000 cwt. in 1884 to 390,000 in 1896, but sugar itself was only one-tenth of the export instead of two-sevenths. In Grenada only £15 worth of sugar was exported in 1875, the produce of the island now being chiefly cocoa and spices. In Trinidad cocoa is

Digitized by Google

increasing; in Guiana the recent gold discoveries have filled up something of the gap. The development of "minor" industries is in all the Colonies a prominent object of anxious attention. But there is a natural reluctance to give up a once profitable staple, and many colonists cannot refrain from wishing that there should be some change in the system by which the Imperial Government compels these Colonies to continue a policy of Free Trade. Their Beetroot competitors, Germany, Austria, France, are assisted by protecting Bounties on the one hand, while their second great natural customer, the United States, is protectionist, and will not trade with them on the Free principle. The recent Royal Commission (1897) has very fully recognized the peculiar circumstances, the acuteness of the distress, and the grave peril to social and civilized life.[1]

In spite of industrial depression the Colonies are in every way stronger than they were at the time of Emancipation. The elements of material well-being are immensely improved: railways within the islands, steamers without, telegraphs, posts, telephones, highways, medical attendance, hospitals, and sanitation, are in operation; while in the administration of justice, the equitable incidence of taxation, the diffusion of education, the spread of inducements to industry and thrift, and other factors of social welfare, the Colonies have participated in the general progressiveness of the Victorian era.

The cause of religion has in these civilizing agencies ground for confidence—so far as religion walks by sight—that her work will not for any length of time be frustrated by a lamentable retrogression towards a

[1] The Queen's Speech of 1898 contains a promise of measures of relief which will be under discussion when this volume is in the press.

Digitized by Google

struggle for the bare necessaries of life. The Church feels grateful beyond words for the advance she has been permitted by Divine Providence to make in her organization, and in her hold on the people. If any one point were to be selected, perhaps it would be the increase of lay work. The spiritual energy of the clergy is doubtless the central force in religious influence; but in these islands the masses are not yet at a point of stability which enables them to recruit largely the ranks of the priesthood, which is therefore of necessity somewhat of an external influence to them still. The Baptists learned that it was dangerous to press on too rapidly in admitting to the pastorate or the charge of congregations, and found themselves in difficulties; and the Methodists had a like experience to a less degree. But our quiet advance by means of minor orders, Catechists, Lay Readers, Sunday School teachers, schoolmasters, Church Army officers, members of St. Andrew's Brotherhood, workers for Missionary and Temperance Societies and the like, is most promising. Trained in these posts of honourable toil, a body of men is being formed upon whom the Church is even now largely depending, and from whom she looks for an ever-increasing advance towards self-sufficiency even in the highest spiritual forces.

Next to this we would place the continual increase of opportunity for laymen, and for women, of education and position. The enterprises of the Church in works of religion and beneficence are becoming not only so numerous, but of such a nature, that they absolutely pre-suppose an increasing Christian laity, and these openings must act on generous minds as an effective call. It is pleasant to be able to quote a local opinion that the response is being made. The preface to the Barbados Church Calendar of 1886 closes with these words—"Last but not least, there

Digitized by Google

is a manifest interest and zealous co-operation in the work and welfare of the Church shown by many of the laity—two or three of whom may be found in each of the parishes, encouraging the Clergy and sharing in their work, wherever and whenever there is an opportunity."

Another point of leading importance is the advance towards elasticity in worship. It has been the settled conviction of many observers that the Moravian and the Methodist modes of worship and devotion on the one hand, and the Roman on the other, are congenial to the Negro in ways in which the old 18th-century Anglican type is not. Long thought thus a hundred years ago, Dr. Underhill and Mr. Salmon are examples of men who think so to-day. If, therefore, progress such as has been shown has been possible even within the lines of the Act of Uniformity—so useful as a controlling measure in times of fierce strife—now that the Church has resumed its authority in these Colonies adaptation is both possible and safe. And thus room and scope will be offered more freely than hitherto for methods and means such as special features in West Indian character and West Indian circumstance require.

Another point. These Churches most cordially cherish their membership of the great Anglican Communion; daughter churches, they are still of the household. And thus unity of faith, worship, and the ordering of life is in no danger. Other bodies have suffered from premature independence. The loose organization of the Congregationalists and Baptists has over and over again led to a feeling of helplessness in times of difficulty, and to appeals to England for Deputations to set things right. Our West Indian Churches feel that they have this assistance in a regular and continuous way, by their constitutions and their episcopate. The Methodists have a similar

Digitized by Google

advantage, and they profit by it: as do the Moravians. But the latter look to Germany for direction and can never become the popular Church in British Colonies; the former will run side by side with us here as they do at home; but even they are not so organically connected with the British centres as we are. And we can have no feeling other than of gratitude for the effectiveness of our loyalty to ancient Church principle in giving us confidence that we have in it a distinct advantage in the direction of becoming the popular Church of the British West Indies.

One last reflection. English Churchmen must not yet regard these churches as on a par with the colonial churches in Canada or Australia. The Missionary character belongs to them still. Even the most northern portion, the Bahamas, scattered islands with sparse populations, presents many of the features of Missionary life; and the rest of the region is wholly within the tropics. As James Stephen said long ago, no Englishman goes out to these islands for any motive except two, religion and gold. This is true still, if we add share in governmental or professional work. In Guiana out of a list of 146 clergy given by Farrar, ninety-four had retired, only fifty-two had died there;[1] and civilian records show a still greater proportion of temporary sojourns. The masses of the inhabitants are of tropical race; the Negro is only on his way to civilization and Christianity, and the East Indian is still heathen in social life and religion. And behind the settlements, in the swamps, are the Aboriginal tribes. The white people in these Colonies form only a nucleus, and a diminishing one, and they must not be left by English Churchmen to bear the whole burden of evangelization. Of support from home the call is mainly for men. It might well be that a

[1] See Appendix III.

Digitized by Google

system of visits by Missioners would be of great service, regularly, say every Lent. A few men must go out annually to keep up the strength of the clergy; and the episcopate, though not necessarily to be supplied direct from home, and entirely so, must be the means of bringing out at least some of a higher calibre than could be expected to go out to incumbencies. The Nonconformist bodies all feel this. The West Indies as classic ground must not be prematurely left alone as if they were simply communities of our own race. They suffered in the past; and two generations do not suffice to render them self-sufficient. Tenderness, generosity, and kindly training, such as in a family an elder sister gives to those just emerging from the nursery, are asked for still by these West Indian churches. They contain the elements of a future independence, but there is not yet maturity.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX I

THE WEST INDIAN EPISCOPATE

ANTIGUA.

D. G. Davis, 1842.
S. J. Rigaud, 1858.
W. W. Jackson, 1860.
C. J. Branch, 1882 (coadj.).
C. J. Branch, 1895.
H. Mather, 1897.

BARBADOS, 1824.

W. H. Coleridge, 1824.
T. Parry, 1842.
H. H. Parry, 1868 (coadj.).
J. Mitchinson, 1873.
H. Bree, 1882.

BRITISH HONDURAS, 1883.

H. R. Holme, 1891.
G. A. Ormsby, 1893.

GUIANA.

W. P. Austin, 1842.
W. P. Swaby, 1893.

JAMAICA, 1824.

C. Lipscombe, 1824.
A. G. Spencer, 1843.
R. Courtenay, 1853 (coadj.).
W. G. Tozer, 1879.
E. Nuttall, 1880.
C. F. Douet (Assist.), 1888.

NASSAU, 1861.

C. Caulfield, 1861.
A. R. P. Venables, 1863.
F. A. R. Cramer-Roberts, 1878.
E. T. Churton, 1886.

TRINIDAD, 1872.

R. Rawle, 1872.
J. T. Hayes, 1889.

WINDWARD ISLANDS, 1879.

J. Mitchinson, 1879.
H. Bree, 1882 (res. 1897).

PRIMATES:

WILLIAM PIERCY AUSTIN, first Bishop of Guiana, 1883.
ENOS NUTALL, fourth Bishop of Jamaica, 1893, first ARCHBISHOP.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX II

Colonies.	Acquired.	Date.	Population 1833.	Population 1891.	Diocese.
Jamaica	Conquest, from Spain	1655	369,000	639,000	Jamaica
Barbados	Settlement, original	1605, 1625	101,000	182,000	Barbados
*Antigua	Settlement	1632	34,000	36,000	Antigua
*St. Kitts and Nevis	Settlement	1623	35,000	47,000	,,
*Dominica	Conquest, from France	1763	20,000	26,000	,,
*Montserrat ...	Settlement	1632	7,000	11,000	,,
*Virgin Islands ...	Settlement	1635	10,000	4,000	,,
†St. Vincent ...	Conquest, from France	1763	27,000	41,000	Windward Is.
†Grenada	,, ,,	1763	28,000	53,000	,,
†S. Lucia	,, ,,	1803	17,000	42,000	,,
Trinidad and Tobago	Conquered, Spain	1797	57,000	200,000	Trinidad
Guiana	Conquered, Holland	1803	106,000	278,000	Guiana
Bahamas	Settlement	1629	17,000	47,000	Nassau
Br. Honduras ...	Treaty, Spain	1783		31,000	Br. Honduras

* Government of the Leeward Islands; with local Legislatures.

† Government of the Windward Islands; with local Legislatures.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX III

Although the climate is tropical, and returns to England not infrequent, there are not lacking many instances of lengthy service; the following are a few taken from easily accessible sources of information.

Bishops: Austin, 7 years as deacon and priest, 51 as Bishop —58. Died.
Davis, 27 years as deacon and priest, 15 as Bishop —42. Died.
Parry, 17 years as deacon and priest, 26 as Bishop —43. Retired (2 years).
Jackson, 26 years as deacon and priest, 22 as Bishop—48. Retired (13 years).
Rawle, 17 years as deacon and priest (8 years at home), 17 years as Bishop—34. Died.

Dean: Clarke, 44 years as rector, 12 as Dean, succeeding Garnet, rector for 53 years (Bridgetown).

Archdeacons: Webb, 36 years as deacon and priest—36. Retired (12 years).
Farrar, 29 as deacon and priest, 11 as Archdeacon —40. Died.
Frederick, 27 as deacon and priest, 15 as Archdeacon—42. Died.
W. H. Brett, 40 years as Missionary—40. Retired (6 years).

It is said that the first clergyman in Antigua (Ramsay) officiated from 1634—1693, 59 years; and the first rector of St. Paul's in that Island, 1681—1732, 51 years (Arch. Clark). William Austin was rector of St. John's, Essequibo, from 1826—1883, 57 years.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX IV

LANDMARKS FOR W. I. CHURCH HISTORY

1492. Discovery of America (Bahamas).
1605. British Flag planted on Barbados.
1623. Warner's settlement in St. Kitts.
1625. Settlement in Barbados.
1629. ,, Bahamas.
1632. ,, Antigua.
1640. Sugar introduced from Brazil.
1655. Capture of Jamaica.
1692. Earthquake at Port Royal.
1699. S.P.C.K. founded.
1701. S.P.G. founded.
1710. Codrington died.
1717. Convocations silenced in England.
1732. Moravian Missions commenced.
1763. Cession of various islands by France.
1782. Rodney's Victory.
1786. Dr. Coke's first visit.
1786. George Lisle introduces Baptists.
1787. First Colonial Bishop (Nova Scotia).
1791. Republic of Hayti.
1794. Christian Faith Society.
1797. Trinidad acquired.
1799. Beetroot Sugar first made (Fr.).
1799. Church Missionary Society.
1799. Religious Tract Society.
1803. British Guiana ceded.
1804. Bible Society.
1807. Slave Trade abolished.
1808. London Missionary Society in Demerara.
1813. First Baptist Missionary.
1823. British Government take up Amelioration.
1824. Bishops appointed.
1824. First Presbyterian Mission.
1824. Judicial murder of John Smith.
1825. Ladies' Education Society.
1830. Codrington College opened.

Digitized by Google

1831. Insurrection and Riots in Jamaica.
1832. Knibb and Burchell Deputation.
1833. Emancipation Act passed.
1834. ,, ,, came into effect.
1834. Coolie Immigration began.
1838. Apprenticeship system ended.
1840. Arrival of W. H. Brett in Guiana.
1841. Colonial Bishoprics Fund.
1842. The Dioceses subdivided.
1846. Protection of Colonial Sugar abandoned.
1847. Principal Rawle at Codrington College.
1851. Pongas Mission founded.
1851. First Diocesan Synod (Exeter).
1851. ,, ,, ,, in Colonies (Toronto).
1854. Convocations regained activity.
1865. Riots in Jamaica (Eyre and Gordon).
1866. Suspension of the old Constitution.
1867. Sir J. P. Grant commenced Disendowment.
1867. First Lambeth Conference.
1871. First W. I. Synod (J.).
1873. First Conference of W. I. Bishops.
1883. First Provincial Synod.
1892. Episcopal Jubilee of Bishop Austin.
1897. The title of Archbishop assumed.
1897. Visit of Bishop Tugwell.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX V

LIST OF BOOKS SPECIFICALLY QUOTED

Anderson, History of the Colonial Church, 1856. Quoted on pages 50, 55, 60.
Antigua and the Antiguans, 1844 (Mrs. Lanagan). 58, 105.
Barrett, Dr. G. S., Report to Congregational Union, 1896. 145, 163, 198, 200, 248.
Berkeley, Bp., and Butler, Bp., in Sermons for S.P.G. 55, 65, 68.
Bridges, Annals of Jamaica, 1826–8. 48, 52, 57, 85, 86, 88, 94.
Brett, in The Apostle of the Indians of Guiana, 1887. 212.
Coleridge, Bishop, Charges, Addresses, etc. 94, 106, 107, 109, 111, 114, 121.
Colonial Office List, 1897. 147, 191.
Davy, Dr., The West Indies, 1854. 108, 114, 142.
De Verteuil, Trinidad, 1884. 123, 191, 199, 200.
Edwards, Bryan, 1794. 38, 41, 51, 60.
Froude, The English in the W. Indies, 1888. 253.
Gardner, History of Jamaica, 1873. 46, 49, 60, 88, 106, 112.
Hawkins, Colonial Bishoprics Fund. 53.
Hodder, Conquests of the Cross. 113.
Ligon, Barbados, 1657. 65.
Lodge, English Colonies in America, 1881. 39.
Long, Jamaica, 1774. 38, 41, 44, 47, 51, 57, 58, 59, 61, 62, 68, 70.
Lucas, The West Indies, 1890. 186, 200.
Merivale, H., Lectures on Colonization, 1862. 41.
Moister, The West Indies, Enslaved and Free, 1883. 56.
Payne, E. J., European Colonies, 1877. 41, 79.
Perry, English Church History, 1887. 58.
Pinckard, Notes on West Indies, 1806. 127.
Poyer, History of Barbados, 1808. 41, 79.
Rawle, Life of. 113.
Salmon, Caribbean Confederation; no date, about 1889. 25, 255, 260.
Samuel, Methodist Missions, 1850. 87.
Schomburgk, Barbados, 1848. 47, 113, 228.

Digitized by Google

S.P.G., Digest of Records, 1893. Quoted on pages 101, 102, 196, *passim*.
Stewart, View of Jamaica, 1823. 31, 48, 85.
Synodalia, and Canons. Chapter vii., *passim*.
Tucker, H. W., English Church in other Lands, 1886. 54, 145, 149.
Tugwell, Bp., C.M.S. Intelligencer, April 1897. 198, 223.
Underhill, Dr., The West Indies, 1861. 37, 99, 105, 117, 205, 260.
Wilberforce, Bp., The American Church, 1846. 49.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX VI

FALKLAND ISLANDS

THE Falkland Islands diocese is not in the West Indian Province, but holds mission direct from the see of Canterbury. Nor have these islands any connection or affinity, either historical or industrial, with those in the Caribbean Sea. But as the diocese is in no province, this seems to be the place for a brief record in a series of Colonial Church histories.

The episcopal seat is in the Falkland group at the eastern entrance of the Straits of Magellan, 3500 miles south of the equator. There are two large islands and some hundred small ones. They were discovered by an Englishman (Davis), and have been in the possession of France, Spain, and the Republic of Buenos Ayres. In 1833 they were taken into the British Empire, for the protection of the whale fishery. Since 1884 they have been self-supporting. There is no indigenous population, but about 2000 English people, chiefly occupied in sheep-farming. A Governor, a Colonial Secretary, a Judge, and two unofficial members of Council administer the government. The government support two chaplains, and also grant £50 to a Roman chaplain: the Bishop's stipend is paid by a Missionary Society. Education is provided in two Government schools, a Romanist, a Baptist, and a private school. There is a small Cathedral not yet completed.

But the diocese itself is of wider range and importance. It is constituted to organize all the operations of the English Church on the continent of South America, except Guiana. Quite recently, however, our work in the isthmus of Panama has been placed under British Honduras, and any work in Venezuela will be directed from Trinidad.

On the mainland there are a considerable number of British residents—merchants, graziers, miners, and mechanics, especially in the Argentine territories; and many ships visit the various ports. In consequence "chaplains" are settled by the South American Missionary Society in the chief centres, who make it their primary duty to minister to British residents and sailors. In Buenos Ayres city and suburbs, for example, there are four churches and several mission-rooms; and in Patagonia there are

Digitized by Google

two Welsh clergy employed. Evangelistic work is carried on among Indians, who are adjacent to these centres, notably in Chili and Paraguay. There was at one time a good deal of opposition from the Romanist authorities, but now toleration is the rule, except in Peru. The attitude of our clergy is not aggressive, nor is controversy sought; but they hold themselves open to inquiries on the part of all.

The history of this diocese is bound up with that of the *South American Missionary Society*. This was commenced in 1844 under the title of The Patagonian Mission, with a view to work among the wild and savage natives of Patagonia and Tierra del Fuego. Its founder was Allen Gardiner, a naval captain. He spent his latter years as a lay missionary, and died, with six companions, on one of the islands of the Fuego Archipelago in 1851. His journals were recovered, and disclosed a moving record of sufferings heroically endured. Attention was drawn to these regions, and another party was sent out, who were massacred, however, while praying on the shore. In 1863 the Rev. W. H. Stirling was sent, and the Society was constituted with its present scope and title. It was this work in the gloomy regions at the extremity of South America which moved Darwin to become a subscriber to a Missionary Society. The natives he had, on his famous *Voyage of the 'Beagle,'* noted as "in the lowest state," and he was glad to recognize results which he had thought beyond possibility. The British Admiralty were able to issue notices that since the work of the Society was established the natives had so changed that the islands of Fuego need no longer be shunned by shipwrecked mariners; and the King of Italy had a medal struck to send as his acknowledgment of timely assistance to an Italian expedition.

The action of the Argentine authorities and the pressure of immigration are driving the natives into the interior, and their numbers are diminishing. This is, therefore, another instance of Christian missions ministering the consolations of religion to a decaying race of men.

The Bishopric was established in 1869. Mr. Stirling was consecrated bishop, continuing to be General Superintendent of all the South American Missionary Society's work. He has remained at this extremely arduous post for now nearly thirty years.

Digitized by Google

INDEX

ABOLITION of slavery, 77, 95–99
Absenteeism, 25, 27, 41, 143; of officials, 28, 41
Amelioration, proposed in lieu of abolition, 80, 81, 87; Canning's proposals, 88
ANTIGUA, mildness of slavery in, 23; Methodists and Moravians, 72, 73; amelioration of slavery, 81; beneficial results, 86; acceptance of emancipation, 96. Diocese formed, 105; societies, 114; no labour difficulties, 115; disestablishment, 140; concurrent endowment rejected, 141; special points, 241
Apprenticeship, temporary adoption, 101
Archbishop, title assumed, 167
Architecture of churches, 109
Austin, Bishop, and first Primate of West Indies, 167; long episcopate, 172; 207

BAHAMAS, 10, 104; account of, 126–128; disendowment, 141; recent history, 245
Baptism, Holy, refused to slaves, 64–66; their admission, 88; after emancipation, 106
Baptists, 74; Missionary Society, 104; refuse concurrent endowment, 123; in Honduras, 131, 132; Calabar College, 181 *n.*; present position, 248–252
BARBADOS, rapid development, 15; 'poor whites,' 32; ungodliness, 47; in no difficulty after emancipation, 115; re-establishment of the Church, 142–144
Berkeley, Bishop, pleads for Colonial episcopacy, 53, 55; on Christianity and slavery, 66, 68, 233
Blomfield, Bishop, 238
Bond-servants, white, origin and history, 31, 32
Boyle, Robert, 235
Brett, William Henry, Apostle of the Guiana Indians, 175, 207, 213–216
Burial, in early days, 47; improvement, 109
Butler, Bishop, pleads for episcopacy, 53, 55; Christianity and slavery, 67

Canterbury, St. Augustine's College, 92, 172

Digitized by Google

Canterbury, see of, in relation to West Indies, 169, 170
Caribs, aborigines of West Indies, disappearance in many islands, 15; account of, and of missions to, in islands, 209–211; in Guiana, 117, 211–217
Catechists, 57, 105, 176–178, 182, 258
Cathedrals, 175
Chapters, Cathedral, 175
Chinese, 208
Christian Faith Society, 62, 81, 87, 103, 181; history of, 235–240
Church Army, 180
Church Missionary Society, 85, 103, 190, 213, 219, 233, 235
Clergy, support of, 44, 46, 82, 91, 163; character in slavery period, 56–60; absence of control over, 81, 91; supply of, 92, 105, 172; tenure of cures, early days, 51; recent, 153, 159; education of, 180–182
Codrington, Christopher. *See* College
Codrington College, 53 *n.*, 61, 64, 92, 94, 105, 172, 180, 182; history of, 224–229
Colenso, Bishop, case of, affected all Colonial churches, 151
Coleridge, Bishop, 91, 95, 106, 107, 111, 112, 121, 174, 213, 228, 233
Colonial and Continental Church Society, 103, 130, 235
Colonial Clergy Act, 173 *n.*
Colonists, the original settlers and early colonists, 33, 47
Colour, 'people of colour,' 35, 37, 83, 109, 193
Confirmation, 106
Congregationalists, 248
Coolies, the system, and the Church's work, 117, 204–207
Cromwell, and West Indies, 10, 31, 33, 44
Cruelties of West Indian slavery considered, 21–25
Cuba, 218

Dependence, marked feature of West Indian colonies, as to slave-trade, 17; slavery, 25; absentees, 27; also 40–42, and 260
Diocesan Constitutions, general features of, 153; an example, Jamaica, 154–167
Dioceses constituted, 89; rearranged, 105; again, 171
Disestablishment and disendowment commenced, 134; causes of, 134–141; not demanded locally, 141; effects of, 145, 148
Dissenters, toleration, 45
DOMINICA, 10, 126; disendowment, 140, 210
Durham University, 232
Dutch in West Indies, 11, 15, 34, 118, 126

Education, in slavery period, 60–63; later, 111–113; denominational *v.* secular, 124–126; recent account, 182–192
Emancipation, 77, 95–99
Endowment, not identical with establishment, 123
Endowment, concurrent, in Jamaica, 52; Trinidad, 140; Guiana, 140; refused in Antigua, 141; in Barbados, 144
Episcopacy, jurisdiction of Bishop of London, 48–51; local episcopate refused by British Government, 52–56; effects of refusal, 56–63; granted by

Digitized by Google

Canning, 89; removed from Crown jurisdiction, 135; character of, in West Indies, 171
Establishment, concurrent, in Guiana, 92, 128
Establishment, simultaneous with original occupation, 44; in conquered colonies, 118–122

Falkland Islands, 269
Family life, 37
Fertility of soil, 12
Finance, diocesan, 163
Free trade, as affecting West Indies, 13, 257
French, in West Indies, 9–12, 14, 118; treatment of slaves, 22, 25, 63; care of colonies, 34, 41
Froude, J. A., misrepresentations of Church, 253

Government in West Indies, 14
Governors, act as Ordinary, 51
GRENADA, 26, 241, 242. *See also* Windward Islands
GUIANA, British, 10; Smith of Demarara case, 89; three colonies united, 92; religion in, concurrent establishment, 126–128, 140; coolies, 117, 204; missions to, 117, 211–218; Catechists' College, 182; special points, 245

Hayti, 10, 11; influence on Jamaica, 79; English Church in, 218
Higher life, in slavery period, 38–40
Hindus. *See* Coolies
Holy Communion, refused in slavery period, 46; after emancipation, 107, 161
HONDURAS, British, 10; history of, 131, 210, 219; special points, 246

Indented servants, 31, 32
Industrial system, 15; present depression, 256
Ireland, disestablishment of Church, 135

JAMAICA, 10; harsh slave policy considered, 22, 23; effect of maroons, 35; of Hayti, 79; resistance to abolition, 77–79; labour policy afterwards, 115; disestablishment, 139; diocesan constitution and church agencies, 154–166; education, 180–190
Jews, 31

Keble, John, 91
Kidnapping, 32
Kingsley, Charles, 205

Ladies' Negro Education Society, 240
Lambeth Conference, 150, 152, 170
Laws of colonies, 14
Lay offices and work, 57, 106, 110, 153, 177, 258
Letters patent, discontinued, 135
Lipscombe, first Bishop of Jamaica, 91, 112
London, Bishop's jurisdiction in West Indies, 45–51, 81
London Missionary Society, 194
Longevity, cases of, 264

Maroons, 24, 35
Marriage, forbidden to slaves, 37; after emancipation, 107, 117, 161; in recent years, 194–197
Methodists, 73, 104; accept endowment, 123, 130, 131, 132; present position, 249–252
Mico charity, 112, 189
Milton, John, 44

Digitized by Google

Morality, 37, 38, 108, 194–197
Moravians in West Indies, 72, 104; accept endowment, 123, 132, 226; present position, 249–252
Music, Church, 94, 95, 106, 110

NASSAU. *See* Bahamas
Negro, condition in Africa, 24; features of character, 114–116; importance of religion in education, 191–202. *See* Slaves
NEVIS, 10, 11; and in Antigua diocese
New England Company, 235
Nuttall, Archbishop, 147; Bishop of Jamaica, 159; second Primate, 167; first Archbishop, 167, 174

Ordinary, the Governors act as, 51

Parishes, marked out at outset, 44; not always had churches, 47
Pinder, J. H., 92, 131, 213, 228, 233
Plantations, the system, 12, 15; features of, 25, 27, 61
Pongas, mission in West Africa, 116; history, 220–224
Porteus, Bishop, 236
Porto Rico, 218
Portuguese, 15, 52, 247
Presbyterians, 52, 71, 83, 117, 130, 132, 208, 247–252
Province, the West Indian, 167

Races, relations between whites and negroes, 107, 192
Rawle, Bishop, 113, 116, 153, 173, 180, 229, 233
Re-establishment, in Barbados, 142
Reference, Committee of, in England, 170
Religion and morality, 201
Religious education, 182–192
Rodney, 13
Rome, Church of, in West Indies, 71, 82, 118, 124–126, 132, 247–252

Salvation Army, 250
San Domingo, 218
Schools. *See* Education
Scotch in West Indies, 32, 34, 126
Slavery, considerations on, 18–25; abolished, 96
Slaves, condition and mode of life, 36, 37; the Church in relation to, 63—70; gradual amelioration of condition, 81–89. *See* Negro
Slave Trade, commenced, 16; dimensions and character, 16–18; abolished, 82
Societies, local religious and benevolent, 92, 95, 113, 158, 197
Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, 87, 103, 116, 180, 181, 219, 235
Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, 32, 53, 92, 102, 103, 116, 130, 132, 180, 207, 213, 219, 221, 234. As Trustees of Codrington College *see* Codrington College.
Spanish, in West Indies, 9–12, 22, 24, 25, 63
ST. KITTS, 10; disestablishment, 140; work in, 178. *See* Antigua, diocese
ST. LUCIA, 10, 126, 210; join Windward Islands, 244
St. Thomas (Danish), 219
ST. VINCENT, 10, 126; concur-

Digitized by Google

rent endowment, 140, 201. *See* Windward Islands, diocese
Sugar introduced, 12; importance of, 15; decline of, 256
Sunday observance, 45
Sunday schools, 57, 83, 112, 161; not so full as day schools, 186
Synods, Jamaica, 139; constitution of, at length, 154–164; vitality of, 164

Theological College in Jamaica, 180, 232
TOBAGO, 47, 126, 169, 243, 244
Toleration, adopted in West Indies, 45, 118, 120
Training Colleges, 180–190
TRINIDAD, 118; emancipation in, 102; Church establishment question, 118–123; educational conflict, 124–126; coolies, 117, 204; concurrent endowment, 210; special points, 244

Villenage, the European parallel to Negro slavery, 19–21
VIRGIN ISLANDS, 210

Walpole, Horace, an absentee official, 29
WINDWARD ISLANDS, diocese, 242
Women's work, 111, 179
Worship, public, 93, 109, 201; uniformity or elasticity, 152, 161, 259

Digitized by Google

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON & BUNGAY.

Digitized by Google

PUBLICATIONS

OF THE

Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge.

THE

FATHERS FOR ENGLISH READERS.

A Series of Monographs on the Chief Fathers of the Church.

Fcap. 8vo., cloth boards, 2s. each.

BONIFACE.
By the Rev. I. GREGORY SMITH, M.A. (1s. 6d.).

LEO THE GREAT.
By the Rev. CANON GORE, M.A.

GREGORY THE GREAT.
By the late Rev. J. BARMBY, B.D.

SAINT AMBROSE: his Life, Times, and Teaching.
By the Ven. ARCHDEACON THORNTON, D.D.

SAINT ATHANASIUS: his Life and Times.
By the Rev. R. WHELER BUSH (2s. 6d.).

SAINT AUGUSTINE.
By the Rev. E. L. CUTTS, D.D.

SAINT BASIL THE GREAT.
By the Rev. RICHARD T. SMITH, B.D.

SAINT BERNARD: Abbot of Clairvaux, A.D. 1091—1153.
By the Rev. S. J. EALES, M.A., D.C.L. (2s. 6d.).

SAINT HILARY OF POITIERS, AND SAINT MARTIN OF TOURS.
By the Rev. J. GIBSON CAZENOVE, D.D.

SAINT JEROME.
By the Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, D.D.

SAINT JOHN OF DAMASCUS.
By the Rev. J. H. LUPTON, M.A.

SAINT PATRICK: his Life and Teaching.
By the Rev. E. J. NEWELL, M.A. (2s. 6d.).

SYNESIUS OF CYRENE, Philosopher and Bishop.
By ALICE GARDNER.

THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS.
By the Rev. CANON SCOTT-HOLLAND.

THE DEFENDERS OF THE FAITH; or, The Christian Apologists of the Second and Third Centuries.
By the Rev. F. WATSON, D.D.

THE VENERABLE BEDE.
By the Right Rev. G. F. BROWNE, D.D.

Digitized by Google

Non-Christian Religious Systems.

Fcap. 8vo., cloth boards, 2s. 6d. each.

Buddhism: Being a Sketch of the Life and Teachings of Gautama, the Buddha.
By T. W. RHYS DAVIDS, M.A., Ph.D. With Map.

Buddhism in China.
By the late Rev. S. BEAL. With Map.

Christianity and Buddhism: a Comparison and a Contrast.
By the Rev. T. STERLING BERRY, D.D.

Confucianism and Taouism.
By Professor DOUGLAS, of the British Museum. With Map.

Hinduism.
By Sir M. MONIER WILLIAMS, M.A., D.C.L. With Map.

Islam and its Founder.
By J. W. H. STOBART. With Map.

Islam as a Missionary Religion.
By CHARLES R. HAINES (2s.).

The Coran: Its Composition and Teaching, and the Testimony it bears to the Holy Scriptures.
By Sir WILLIAM MUIR, K.C.S.I., LL.D., D.C.L., Ph.D.

The Religion of the Crescent, or Islam; its Strength, its Weakness, its Origin, its Influence.
By the Rev. W. St. CLAIR-TISDALL, M.A. (4s.)

The Heathen World and St. Paul.

Fcap. 8vo., cloth boards, 2s. each.

St. Paul in Damascus and Arabia.
By the Rev. G. RAWLINSON, M.A. With Map.

St. Paul at Rome.
By the late Very Rev. C. MERIVALE, D.D., D.C.L. With Map.

St. Paul in Asia Minor and at the Syrian Antioch.
By the late Rev. E. H. PLUMPTRE, D.D. With Map.

Digitized by Google

The Home Library.

A Series of Books illustrative of Church History, &c., specially, but not exclusively, adapted for Sunday reading.

Crown 8vo., cloth boards, 3s. 6d. each.

Black and White. Mission Stories.
By the late H. A. FORDE.

Charlemagne.
By the Rev. E. L. CUTTS, D.D. With Map.

Constantine the Great: The Union of Church and State.
By the Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, D.D.

John Hus. The Commencement of Resistance to Papal Authority on the part of the Inferior Clergy.
By the Rev. A. H. WRATISLAW.

Judæa and her Rulers, from Nebuchadnezzar to Vespasian.
By M. BRAMSTON. With Map.

Mazarin.
By the late GUSTAVE MASSON.

Military Religious Orders of the Middle Ages: the Hospitallers, the Templars, the Teutonic Knights, and others.
By the Rev. F. C. WOODHOUSE.

Mitslav; or, the Conversion of Pomerania.
By the late Right Rev. R. MILMAN, D.D.

Narcissus: A Tale of Early Christian Times.
By the Right Rev. W. BOYD CARPENTER.

Richelieu.
By the late GUSTAVE MASSON.

Sketches of the Women of Christendom.
By the late MRS. RUNDLE CHARLES.

The Churchman's Life of Wesley.
By R. DENNY URLIN Esq.

Digitized by Google

THE HOME LIBRARY (Continued).

The Church in Roman Gaul.
By the Rev. R. T. SMITH. With Map.

The Inner Life, as Revealed in the Correspondence of Celebrated Christians.
Edited by the late Rev. T. ERSKINE.

The Life of the Soul in the World: Its Nature, Needs, Dangers, Sorrows, Aids, and Joys.
By the Rev. F. C. WOODHOUSE.

The North African Church.
By the late Rev. J. LLOYD. With Map.

Thoughts and Characters: being Selections from the Writings of the late MRS. RUNDLE CHARLES.

Conversion of the West.

A Series of Volumes showing how the Conversion of the Chief Races of the West was brought about, and their condition before this occurred.

Fcap. 8vo., cloth boards, 2s. each.

The Celts.
By the Rev. G. F. MACLEAR, D.D. With Two Maps.

The English.
By the above Author. With Two Maps.

The Northmen.
By the above Author. With Map.

The Slavs.
By the above Author. With Map.

The Continental Teutons.
By the late Very Rev. Dean MERIVALE. With Map.

Digitized by Google

Devotional Books.

Cheerful Christianity. Having to do with the Lesser Beauties and Blemishes of the Christian Life. By L. B. WALFORD. Printed in red and black. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 1s. 6d.

[*For devotional reading, &c.*]

The Gospel of Suffering. By Mrs. COLIN G. CAMPBELL, Author of "Bible Thoughts for Daily Life." Post 8vo., cloth boards, 1s.

[*Shows the significance of our Lord's teaching as to sorrow. For general use.*]

Our Own Book. Very plain reading for people in humble life By the Rev. F. BOURDILLON, M.A. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 1s.

[*A devotional work, in large type. For the poor.*]

Plain Words for Christ. By the late Rev. R. G. DUTTON. Being a series of Readings for Working Men. Post 8vo., 1s.

[*These readings have to do with very important subjects, which are dealt with in a simple and striking manner.*]

Spiritual Counsels; or, Helps and Hindrances to Holy Living. By the late Rev. R. G. DUTTON, M.A. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 1s.

[*Addresses to young men on points of spiritual interest.*]

Thoughts for Men and Women. The Lord's Prayer. By EMILY C. ORR. Post 8vo., 1s.

[*Simple and suggestive thoughts on the Lord's Prayer.*]

Thoughts for Working Days. Original and selected. By EMILY C. ORR. Post 8vo., 1s.

[*A series of daily readings for a month, in which the path of duty is marked out by selections from the writings of celebrated men.*]

The Message of Peace, and other Christmas Sermons. By the late R. W. CHURCH, Dean of St. Pauls. Crown 8vo., on "hand-made" paper, top edge gilt, buckram boards, 2s. 6d.

[*Eight striking Sermons on the Nativity. Full of deep and suggestive thought.*]

The True Vine. By the late MRS. RUNDLE CHARLES. With border-lines in red. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 1s. 6d.

[*Thoughts on the Parable of the True Vine. For devotional use.*]

Digitized by Google

Miscellaneous Publications.

Bible Places; or, the Topography of the Holy Land: a Succinct Account of all the Places, Rivers, and Mountains of the Land of Israel mentioned in the Bible, so far as they have been identified. Together with their Modern Names and Historical References. By H. B. TRISTRAM, D.D., LL.D., F.R.S. New Edition brought up to date. Crown 8vo. With Map and numerous Woodcuts. Half bound, 5s.

China. By Professor R. K. DOUGLAS, of the British Museum. With Map, and eight full-page Illustrations, and several Vignettes. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 5s.

Christians under the Crescent in Asia. By the Rev. E. L. CUTTS, D.D., Author of "Turning Points of Church History," &c. With numerous Illustrations. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 5s.

Higher Criticism (The) and the Verdict of the Monuments. By the Rev. A. H. SAYCE, Professor of Assyriology, Oxford. Demy 8vo., buckram, bevelled boards, 7s. 6d.

History of Early Christian Art. By the Rev. E. L. CUTTS, D.D. Illustrated. Demy 8vo., cloth boards, 6s.

Illustrated Notes on English Church History. Vol. I. From the earliest Times to the Reformation. Vol. II Reformation and Modern Work. By the Rev. C. A. LANE. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo., cloth boards, each, 1s.

Israel, The Land of. A Journal of Travels in Palestine, undertaken with Special Reference to its Physical Character. Fourth Edition, revised. By the Rev. Canon TRISTRAM. With numerous Illustrations. Cloth boards, 10s. 6d.

Jewish Nation, A History of the. From the Earliest Times to the Present Day. By the late E. H. PALMER. Crown 8vo. With Map and numerous Illustrations. Cloth boards, 4s.

Lesser Lights; or, Some of the Minor Characters of Scripture traced with a View to Instruction and Example in Daily Life. By the Rev. F. BOURDILLON, M.A. First and Second Series. Post 8vo., cloth boards, each, 2s. 6d.; Third Series, 2s.

Digitized by Google

Natural History of the Bible, The: being a Review of the Physical Geography, Geology, and Meteorology of the Holy Land, with a description of every Animal and Plant mentioned in Holy Scripture. By H. B. TRISTRAM, D.D., LL.D., F.R.S. Crown 8vo. With numerous Illustrations. Cloth boards, 5s.

Official Year Book of the Church of England. Demy 8vo., paper boards, 3s.; limp cloth, 4s.

Patriarchal Palestine. By the Rev. A. H. SAYCE, Professor of Assyriology, Oxford. Crown 8vo., with Map, buckram boards, 4s.

Pictorial Architecture of France. By the Rev. H. H. BISHOP, M.A. With numerous Illustrations. Royal 4to., cloth boards, 5s.

Pictorial Architecture of the British Isles. By the Rev. H. H. BISHOP. With about 150 Illustrations. Royal 4to., cloth boards, 4s.

Pictorial Architecture of Greece and Italy. By the Rev. H. H. BISHOP. With numerous Illustrations. Royal 4to., cloth boards, 3s. 6d.

Pictorial Geography of the British Isles. By MARY E. PALGRAVE. With numerous Illustrations. Royal 4to., cloth boards, 3s. 6d.

Russia, Past and Present. Adapted from the German of Lankenau and Oelnitz. By Mrs. CHESTER. With Map and three full-page Woodcuts and Vignettes. Post 8vo., cloth boards, 5s.

Scripture Manners and Customs: being an Account of the Domestic Habits, Arts, &c., of Eastern Nations mentioned in Holy Scripture. Twentieth Edition. Crown 8vo. With numerous Woodcuts. Cloth boards, 4s.

Sinai and Jerusalem; or, Scenes from Bible Lands, consisting of Coloured Photographic Views of Places mentioned in the Bible, including a Panoramic View of Jerusalem. With Descriptive Letterpress by the Rev. F. W. Holland, M.A. 4to., cloth. bevelled boards, gilt edges, 6s.

Digitized by Google

Some Notable Archbishops of Canterbury. By the Rev. MONTAGUE FOWLER, M.A. Crown 8vo., cloth boards, 3s.

Turning Points of English Church History. By the Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, D.D. Crown 8vo., cloth boards, 3s. 6d.

Turning Points of General Church History. By the Rev. E. L. CUTTS, D.D. Crown 8vo., cloth boards, 4s.

Verses. By the late CHRISTINA G. ROSSETTI. Small post 8vo. Printed in red and black. Cloth boards, 3s. 6d.

ANCIENT HISTORY FROM THE MONUMENTS.

[*This series of books is chiefly intended to illustrate the Sacred Scriptures by the results of recent Monumental researches in the East.*]

Fcap. 8vo., cloth boards, price 2s. each.

ASSYRIA, FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE FALL OF NINEVEH.

By the late GEORGE SMITH, of the Department of Oriental Antiquities, British Museum.

BABYLONIA, THE HISTORY OF.

By the late GEORGE SMITH. Edited and brought up to date by the Rev. Professor SAYCE.

PERSIA, FROM THE EARLIEST PERIOD TO THE ARAB CONQUEST.

By the late W. S. W. VAUX, M.A., F.R.S. A New and Revised Edition, by the Rev. Professor A. H. SAYCE.

SINAI, FROM THE FOURTH EGYPTIAN DYNASTY TO THE PRESENT DAY.

By the late H. SPENCER PALMER. A New Edition, revised throughout by the Rev. Professor SAYCE.

LONDON: NORTHUMBERLAND AVENUE, W.C.
43, QUEEN VICTORIA STREET, E.C.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

DUE APR 6 1942
3 1948
FEB 18 1949
OCT 28 '52
MAY 23 1962
MAY 31 1962
NOV 13 '68
MAR 21 1973
NOV 30 1899
NOV 30 1909
Nov. 17
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google